

1 FEDERAL TRADE COMMISSION

2 I N D E X (PUBLIC RECORD)

3

4 WITNESS: DIRECT CROSS REDIRECT RECROSS

5 O'Shaughnessy 7059 7108 7131

6 Willig 7135 7238 7340 (US) 7351

7

8 EXHIBITS FOR ID IN EVID

9 Commission

10 None

11 Schering

12 SPX 2309 7201

13 SPX 2311 7210

14 SPX 2321 7201

15 SPX 2323 7201

16 SPX 2324 7210

17 SPX 2326 7201

18 SPX 2327 7201

19 SPX 2329 7224

20 SPX 2332 7201

21 Upsher

22 None

23

24

25

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1	OTHER EXHIBITS REFERENCED	PAGE
2	Commission	
3	CX 708	7284
4	CX 1716	7297
5	CX 1717	7245
6	Schering	
7	SPX 2065	7241
8	SPX 2295	7177
9	SPX 2331	7193
10	SPX 2333	7224
11	SPX 2334	7201
12	SPX 2335	7213
13	SPX 2991	7197
14	Upsher	
15	None	
16		
17		
18		
19		
20		
21		
22		
23		
24		
25		

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

FEDERAL TRADE COMMISSION

In the Matter of:)
SCHERING-PLOUGH CORPORATION,)
a corporation,)
and)
UPSHER-SMITH LABORATORIES,) File No. D09297
a corporation,)
and)
AMERICAN HOME PRODUCTS,)
a corporation.)
-----)

Friday, March 8, 2002

9:30 a.m.

TRIAL VOLUME 29

PART 1

PUBLIC RECORD

BEFORE THE HONORABLE D. MICHAEL CHAPPELL

Administrative Law Judge

Federal Trade Commission

600 Pennsylvania Avenue, N.W.

Washington, D.C.

Reported by: Susanne Bergling, RMR

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 APPEARANCES:

2

3 ON BEHALF OF THE FEDERAL TRADE COMMISSION:

4 SUSAN A. CREIGHTON, Attorney

5 KAREN G. BOKAT, Attorney

6 MELVIN H. ORLANS, Attorney

7 MICHAEL B. KADES, Attorney

8 SETH C. SILBER, Attorney

9 Federal Trade Commission

10 601 Pennsylvania Avenue, N.W.

11 Washington, D.C. 20580

12 (202) 326-2912

13

14

15 ON BEHALF OF SCHERING-PLOUGH CORPORATION:

16 JOHN W. NIELDS, Attorney

17 LAURA S. SHORES, Attorney

18 MARC G. SCHILDKRAUT, Attorney

19 Howrey, Simon, Arnold & White

20 1299 Pennsylvania Avenue, N.W.

21 Washington, D.C. 20004-2402

22 (202) 783-0800

23

24

25

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 ON BEHALF OF UPSHER-SMITH LABORATORIES:

2 ROBERT D. PAUL, Attorney

3 J. MARK GIDLEY, Attorney

4 CHRISTOPHER M. CURRAN, Attorney

5 White & Case, LLP

6 601 Thirteenth Street, N.W.

7 Suite 600 South

8 Washington, D.C. 20005-3805

9 (202) 626-3610

10

11

12 ON BEHALF OF AMERICAN HOME PRODUCTS:

13 BARBARA H. WOOTTON, Attorney

14 Arnold & Porter

15 555 Twelfth Street, N.W.

16 Washington, D.C. 20004-1206

17 (202) 942-5667

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 P R O C E E D I N G S

2 - - - - -

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Good morning, everyone.

4 ALL COUNSEL: Good morning, Your Honor.

5 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Let's reconvene 9297.

6 What's next?

7 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Schering-Plough calls James
8 O'Shaughnessy to the stand.

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Did Mr. Carney have some
10 evidentiary matter?

11 MR. CURRAN: Yes, he's back at the office. We
12 figured we would bring that up with Your Honor either
13 after the morning break or after the lunch break.

14 JUDGE CHAPPELL: That's fine.

15 MR. CURRAN: Thank you.

16 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Raise your right hand, please.
17 Stand, please.

18 Whereupon--

19 JAMES P. O'SHAUGHNESSY
20 a witness, called for examination, having been first
21 duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:

22 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you, be seated.

23 State your full name, please.

24 THE WITNESS: My name is James O'Shaughnessy,
25 spelled O ' S H A U G H N E S S Y.

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 DIRECT EXAMINATION

2 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

3 Q. Mr. O'Shaughnessy, where are you presently
4 employed?

5 A. I am vice president and chief intellectual
6 property counsel for Rockwell International.

7 Q. And what is it that you actually do there at
8 Rockwell in that employment?

9 A. I am responsible for the company's intellectual
10 property, obtaining suitable intellectual property
11 protection for their innovations, if any, against
12 claims of infringement, and prosecuting claims of
13 infringement as appropriate.

14 Q. Okay. And why were you hired by Rockwell?

15 A. I was formerly a partner at Foley & Lardner,
16 and Rockwell was one of my clients, and the company,
17 during its transition from an aerospace and defense
18 company to a commercial concern, had found that it was
19 the subject of quite a number of patent infringement
20 lawsuits -- in the aggregate, about ten -- amounting to
21 what were a billion dollars in claims. The company
22 asked me to join to manage that litigation
23 successfully.

24 Q. Is that your only employment at this time?

25 A. No, one of the arrangements I have with

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 Rockwell permits me to do some consulting and expert
2 witnessing, such as this case, but also to maintain in
3 a reduced role an ADR practice, alternative dispute
4 resolution practice. There are certain guidelines I
5 need to follow. So, for example, unlike most people in
6 the courtroom today, I'm on vacation.

7 Q. Can you explain a little more about what ADR
8 is?

9 A. ADR is an acronym for alternative dispute
10 resolution. It was popularized I think most by the CPR
11 Institute for Dispute Resolution, and their mantra is
12 alternative to litigation.

13 Q. What was your employment before Rockwell?

14 A. Well, prior to that, as I said, I was a partner
15 at Foley & Lardner for about ten years.

16 Q. And what was your specialty there?

17 A. Intellectual property. My practice engaged in
18 counseling, litigation and ADR.

19 Q. And before Foley & Lardner?

20 A. Prior to that, I was associate patent counsel
21 at Kimberly-Clark, and before that I had a number of
22 jobs early in my career as a lawyer.

23 Q. And what's your educational background?

24 A. I was graduated from Rensselaer Polytechnic
25 Institute with a Bachelor of Science degree, and then I

1 attended Georgetown University Law Center here in
2 Washington, D.C.

3 Q. And how many intellectual property cases have
4 you been involved in in your various roles?

5 A. Approximately 100.

6 Q. And what kind of cases were they?

7 A. The vast majority were intellectual property
8 cases, not all of them. Some were outside the scope of
9 technology disputes, but I'd say at least 80 of those
10 were in the area of intellectual property, and most of
11 those intellectual property cases are patent cases.

12 Q. And you mentioned that you've done some
13 arbitrations?

14 A. Yes.

15 Q. And could you explain what you do in these
16 arbitrations?

17 A. My arbitration practice has been divided
18 between some -- well, I guess the specific answer is I
19 adjudicate disputes, but through the CPR, I do a lot of
20 what's called ICANN arbitration, arbitration over
21 internet domain names. I also serve as a permanent
22 member of a panel, an arbitration panel established by
23 AT&T and Bell South under the interconnect agreement
24 between those companies.

25 Q. And what do you do on that panel?

1 A. It's a standing panel that was put in place by
2 those two companies in anticipation of any problems
3 they would have. Right now the panel, though
4 established, is dormant because there are no disputes
5 to be adjudicated.

6 Q. You've told us you also act as mediator. Could
7 you tell us exactly what you do in your role as a
8 mediator?

9 A. In my mediation practice, my principal role is
10 to facilitate resolution of disputes between parties
11 who are at least ostensibly committed to resolving
12 their disputes, but it's a facilitative role.

13 Q. And do you have any -- are you a member of any
14 professional organizations?

15 A. Throughout my career, I've been a member of
16 several organizations. Two in particular would be
17 relevant to today's proceedings. For about 20 years
18 I've been an active member of the Licensing Executives
19 Society, which is an association of about 5000 members.
20 The common interest is the licensing of technology and
21 technology transfers and the like. The membership is
22 approximately half lawyers and approximately half
23 businessmen and women.

24 The other would be the CPR Institute for
25 Dispute Resolution, which is an organization, again,

1 I've been active in for about 20 years. That is the --
2 I think the champion of ADR, as I described it earlier.

3 Q. And what roles do you participate in in these
4 organizations?

5 A. Both are relatively similar. In LES, I have
6 chaired a number of committees. In the area of ADR, I
7 have lectured both in workshops and in plenary sessions
8 to the members of the organization. In CPR, I have --
9 I'm trained as a mediator by CPR. I lecture at CPR
10 meetings and now help them train mediators from time to
11 time.

12 Q. And what sort of subjects are you lecturing in?

13 A. Primarily mediation, sometimes arbitration, but
14 usually mediation is what I consider to be the best
15 form of ADR.

16 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Okay, Your Honor, Schering
17 offers Mr. O'Shaughnessy as an expert in negotiation,
18 resolution of intellectual property and patent disputes
19 and litigation.

20 MS. CREIGHTON: No objection, Your Honor.

21 MR. CURRAN: No objection, Your Honor.

22 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Motion granted.

23 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

24 Q. Have you been retained as an expert in this
25 matter?

1 A. Yes, I have.

2 Q. And by whom?

3 A. Schering-Plough.

4 Q. And what was your assignment?

5 A. I was asked to evaluate and form an opinion on
6 three different subjects. The first was the settlement
7 of patent disputes in general and the use of extrinsic
8 value creation as a tool in the settlement of those
9 kinds of disputes.

10 Secondly, I was asked to study the expert
11 report of Professor Bresnahan and determine where I
12 would disagree with his position on various issues.

13 And thirdly, to offer my position, my thoughts
14 on what might happen were the Commission to adopt some
15 of the suggestions in Professor Bresnahan's report.

16 Q. Were you asked to review the entire record of
17 this case to render your opinion?

18 A. No, not at all, no. Most of my position comes
19 out of my own experience and not the record itself.

20 Q. You mentioned patent disputes, so let's start
21 there.

22 What is a patent?

23 A. Well, most fundamentally, a patent is the legal
24 right conferred by the Government on the owner to
25 exclude others from engaging in unauthorized activity,

1 such as making or using or selling the subject matter
2 for patent claims.

3 Q. And you mentioned patent disputes, so let's go
4 right to that subject.

5 In your experience, what goes through the minds
6 of business managers when they're engaged in
7 intellectual property or patent litigation?

8 A. Well, the managers I know, it's usually, why
9 me? They view it as as welcome as a disease. It's not
10 something that's normally within the scope of what they
11 do. They are not pleased by the need to engage in
12 patent infringement litigation. They understand it,
13 whether by experience or vicariously, to be
14 time-consuming, to be expensive, to create a great
15 degree of uncertainty in their planning, and they see
16 even from a plaintiff's point of view nothing
17 particularly good can happen from it.

18 Q. You mentioned that it creates a great deal of
19 uncertainty in planning. How does the intellectual
20 property litigation do that?

21 A. Well, intellectual property litigation in
22 general tends to be somewhat more uncertain I think
23 than other types of litigation. I might mention, for
24 example, that during the 1990s or the late 1990s, the
25 Federal Circuit had a reversal rate of about 50 percent

1 in whole or in part. So, even people who thought they
2 were really equipped to understand and be able to
3 predict the outcome of litigation had to step back and
4 wonder really what degree of certainty can we expect
5 here in the outcome of this litigation?

6 When you graph that then onto a business
7 planning process, things become even worse. Lawyers
8 may be equipped to understand and appreciate the
9 problems of uncertainty. Many business managers, while
10 I guess theoretically they can appreciate it, as a
11 practical matter, they deplore it. Their job is to
12 allocate scarce resources. Their job is to make a plan
13 for the company that will endure over a period of time.

14 When you add this extraordinary uncertainty,
15 something they are not familiar with, it confounds the
16 decision-making process. It makes resource allocation
17 much more difficult, and because it's unfamiliar, they
18 don't like it.

19 Q. And so do they place a value on certainty?

20 A. Absolutely. I know from my mediation practice,
21 I've seen people make compromises in order to achieve
22 certainty. From my counseling in Rockwell, I know from
23 firsthand observation. I have heard executives say
24 that they will pay for certainty to avoid the
25 unpredictability in the outcome of patent litigation.

1 Q. Okay. How does it affect investment,
2 uncertainty?

3 A. Well, investments made under conditions of
4 certainty usually can be made more rationally, more
5 reasonably. One with a greater degree of
6 predictability can make a plan to invest in the
7 development of a new product, to develop the market for
8 that product, to engage in the investments necessary to
9 bring it to that market.

10 As soon as an extraordinary type of uncertainty
11 appears, now their planning is confounded, as I said.
12 It makes it more risky, and these are the kinds of
13 risks that are just not within the ordinary ken of the
14 average businessman. They don't experience them.

15 Q. Let's -- excuse me, I'm sorry. Let's put tab 1
16 up on the screen. This is the deposition of Martin
17 Fliesler. Could you tell us who Martin Fliesler is?

18 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor -- I'm sorry, Mr.
19 O'Shaughnessy -- objection. Mr. Fliesler is an expert
20 who we had contemplated calling in rebuttal, but I have
21 informed counsel that we will not be. So, it's unclear
22 what would be the basis on which Mr. O'Shaughnessy
23 would be testifying about his anticipated testimony.

24 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Yes, I was told this morning
25 that Mr. Fliesler will not be testifying, but the

1 expert opinion of Mr. Fliesler I think is relevant to
2 this proceeding. This is from his deposition, and
3 complaint counsel has been allowed to put in lots of
4 deposition testimony, and this is going to be
5 supportive of Mr. O'Shaughnessy's testimony, and in
6 other cases, Mr. O'Shaughnessy is going to be
7 explaining some of the points of Mr. Fliesler.

8 MS. CREIGHTON: Mr. Fliesler's testimony or
9 deposition was not something that we were notified
10 would be something on which Mr. O'Shaughnessy would
11 rely. It's unclear that it -- that we have any
12 foundation that it's the kind of evidence on which an
13 expert in Mr. O'Shaughnessy's field ordinarily would
14 rely in forming his expert opinion.

15 JUDGE CHAPPELL: What's it relevant for?

16 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Excuse me?

17 JUDGE CHAPPELL: What is it relevant for?

18 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: It is relevant to showing
19 that other experts having the same opinions as Mr.
20 O'Shaughnessy on this matter, and I think that is very
21 probative of Mr. O'Shaughnessy's opinion as well.

22 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Is this something he relied on
23 to form his opinion?

24 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: No, his opinion was formed
25 before Mr. Fliesler was deposed. Mr. Fliesler was

1 deposed and his report actually came in after Mr.
2 O'Shaughnessy's report was --

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Objection sustained. It's not
4 coming in.

5 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

6 Q. Are you familiar with the term "risk aversion"?

7 A. Yes, I am.

8 Q. And how would you define it?

9 A. I think classically "risk aversion" is defined
10 as -- or a "risk averse" person is defined as someone
11 who would be unwilling to take a reasonable bet. Where
12 I see risk aversion, it really is the obverse of the
13 certainty that we just discussed. A person who strives
14 for certainty is less risk averse than someone who is
15 more risk-neutral and risk-loving.

16 Q. In your experience, how common is risk aversion
17 or the preference for certainty among firms attempting
18 to settle intellectual property disputes?

19 A. In my mediation and settlement practice, I see
20 it all the time. It -- it is very evident, especially
21 when in a mediation you have a businessman or
22 businesswoman present in the room. They're the ones
23 who really feel it, because they're the ones with the
24 P&L responsibility, but risk aversion is -- it's
25 palpable.

1 Q. And why specifically in intellectual property
2 disputes are firms risk averse?

3 A. Well, risk aversion or risk profiles tend to
4 vary with a lot of factors, one of which would be the
5 sunk costs a party has in the investments that party
6 has made in developing a product, in developing a
7 market for the product and the means to deliver it.
8 These are all very expensive investments.

9 Moreover, when one makes such an investment and
10 is relying on a stream of income from it, not only must
11 you recoup the investment and some premium for the
12 risk, large companies, such as Rockwell and others,
13 need that stream of income to fund continuing
14 innovation. They need to be able to fund the failures
15 as well as the successes.

16 So, when there is so much reliance placed on
17 that stream of income in respect of a patent and
18 product in process, managers who are responsible for
19 that asset are understandably risk averse, at least in
20 my experience.

21 Q. Well, if firms are risk averse, why don't they
22 just go out and buy insurance?

23 A. We have looked at insurance in the field of
24 intellectual property and specifically patents, and
25 there are policies offered for those who wish to assert

1 a patent and other policies offered for those desiring
2 to defend against claims. Our analysis of all the
3 policies is that they are not commercially reasonable.

4 Q. Okay. Does risk aversion affect the range of
5 potential settlements in litigation?

6 A. Yes, it does, and in fact, in a very predictive
7 way. The more risk averse a party, the more -- the
8 more it opens up other avenues for exploration for
9 settlement.

10 Q. I think you said at one point, so I think we
11 need to correct it, did you mean to say a person who
12 strives for certainty is less risk averse?

13 A. No.

14 Q. Okay. More risk averse, is that what you
15 intended to say?

16 A. Yes, yes. Well, there's a direct correlation I
17 guess is what I meant to say. If I said it otherwise,
18 I misspoke.

19 Q. Who typically in your experience in mediation
20 and in other intellectual property disputes is -- among
21 the parties is more risk averse?

22 A. Usually but not always it's the patent holder.
23 It's the party that has relied on the patent system to
24 shelter those investments I mentioned, and he's made
25 often times very large investments in product

1 development, market development and the like. They
2 need to be able to recoup that investment, and they
3 require certainty, and with that certainty comes a
4 higher degree of risk aversion.

5 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, I'd like to move to
6 strike the previous question and answer. I don't
7 believe it's within the scope of Mr. O'Shaughnessy's
8 report.

9 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: That risk aversion isn't in
10 the scope of his report?

11 MS. CREIGHTON: No, the patent holder is more
12 likely to be risk averse.

13 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: I don't -- I think that is
14 well within the subject of risk aversion and how these
15 disputes are, in fact, settled. I'm not sure the
16 specific sentence that -- as to who was more risk
17 averse, the patent holder or the other party, is in his
18 report, but it's well within the scope of his report on
19 risk aversion.

20 JUDGE CHAPPELL: So, his expert opinion or his
21 report that he submitted indicated he was going to
22 testify about risk aversion?

23 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Oh, absolutely.

24 JUDGE CHAPPELL: And obviously about patents?

25 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Yes.

1 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'll allow it.

2 Let me ask another question to clarify. This
3 Martin Fliesler?

4 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Fliesler, yes.

5 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Complaint counsel, was that
6 deposition admitted as an exhibit? Has that been
7 admitted?

8 MS. CREIGHTON: No, Your Honor.

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you.

10 You may continue.

11 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

12 Q. You mentioned earlier that firms that have a
13 preference for certainty or are risk averse are willing
14 to give up something to obtain that certainty. Why is
15 that?

16 A. Well, again, it goes back to this notion of
17 planning, the ability to plan with, you know, some
18 degree of reliability on the outcome. Everybody
19 understands that there's no certain things in life, but
20 business managers who have to allocate resources are
21 familiar with certain types of risk, you know, the risk
22 that a product can't be developed within its
23 parameters, that it can't be made within the cost
24 specifications, that the market may reject it. All of
25 those things are within the ordinary scope of a

1 manager's experience and understanding.

2 Where it comes to patent infringement
3 litigation, that kind of uncertainty is completely
4 unfamiliar. They want to -- they want to take that
5 kind of uncertainty out of the plan so that they can
6 get back to running the businesses.

7 Q. And how common is that in your experience?

8 A. It's -- it's endemic in the field of patent
9 infringement litigation. These are usually very
10 serious cases amounting to in some cases you bet your
11 life companies -- you bet your company cases. The
12 stakes are very high.

13 Q. Let's go on to another subject.

14 How do the parties' world view of the
15 litigation, their business, et cetera, affect the
16 outcomes of settlements?

17 A. When parties come to negotiate, they, of
18 course, bring into the conference room their
19 understanding of the dispute. They know their position
20 very well. They have a fairly good understanding of
21 their adversary's position. In some cases, the parties
22 have some experience in negotiation. They may not have
23 negotiated the settlement of a patent case, but they
24 have negotiated other transactions, and they bring into
25 the court or to the conference room that general sort

1 of set of experiences, you know, the experiences of --
2 the common experiences of life, I guess.

3 Along with that, they bring in, you know, their
4 normal fears and worries as well. So, for example, if
5 I could use a -- something that maybe everybody in the
6 courtroom is familiar with, the purchase and sale of a
7 car. You've heard the term "buyer's remorse." It's
8 something that really affects a lot of negotiations
9 over automobiles.

10 You know, you go ask the dealer, you know,
11 what's your best price and let me see the sticker.
12 You're always wondering, is that really the best price
13 I can get and did he really pay the sticker price? And
14 so people shop a lot. And they do it because they're
15 worried that they are going to find after the
16 transaction that they could have got a better deal, or
17 worse yet, their neighbor's going to tell them what a
18 better deal he or she got, and that's a form of buyer's
19 remorse.

20 It could be the same in the sale of a used car,
21 where the purchaser is wondering, well, does the dealer
22 really know about the defects in this car? Even if I
23 take it to my own mechanic, am I going to find out
24 later it's a lemon, it's a bad deal? And again, it's
25 this notion of buyer's remorse. So, we're all familiar

1 with that kind of remorseful feeling, and people, when
2 they negotiate -- now back in the context of a patent
3 infringement litigation and the settlement of it --
4 they bring these kinds of experiences into that
5 negotiation with them, and they're worried that the
6 other side will have information on a matter of
7 consequence to the outcome that is superior to theirs
8 and that when the transaction is through, they're going
9 to be bested. Somehow they are going to get into that
10 win-lose posture that sometimes is talked about.

11 And so people who lack the information on an
12 issue of consequence usually dig their heels in and
13 negotiate very hard, and it's something -- it's a
14 dynamic that's present in these kinds of negotiations
15 and settlement, and it's something a mediator has to be
16 aware of if he or she is going to manage the parties to
17 a successful resolution of the dispute.

18 Q. What has been your experience regarding the
19 litigating parties' expectations concerning the
20 outcomes of litigation?

21 A. Well, I think you find litigating parties all
22 over the map when it comes to their expectations, and
23 people have classified them in lots of different ways.
24 Professor Bresnahan had three classifications of
25 parties and their expectations being equally optimistic

1 or I guess optimistic, pessimistic or overly
2 pessimistic and the equal assessment case, being his
3 three, and in my experience, I've seen two additional
4 categories.

5 Professor Bresnahan's overly optimistic
6 category is certainly true, but there are cases where
7 people are wildly optimistic, well beyond the normal
8 range of optimism, and that is not all that uncommon, I
9 believe. And then there's a last category that I've
10 identified, and that's a party who's somewhat
11 indifferent to the outcome, because they're using the
12 litigation for a specific person, they have a different
13 agenda. They are not indifferent to the process, but
14 they are indifferent to the outcome.

15 I'd say most of the parties I see fall in the
16 optimistic categories, either highly optimistic or
17 wildly optimistic, but there are others in the other
18 categories as well.

19 Q. Okay. How does over-optimism affect the
20 likelihood of settlement?

21 A. Well, over-optimism is at tension with risk
22 aversion. Risk aversion drives parties towards
23 settlement. They are willing to pay for that
24 certainty. Optimism or over-optimism tends to drive
25 them apart and create a wider gap in their positions,

1 their negotiating positions. So, the two are at odds.

2 Q. Okay. Can firms engaged in intellectual
3 property litigation always come to a settlement when
4 they are over-optimistic and risk averse?

5 A. I think it depends on which predominates.
6 If -- if a firm is more over-optimistic than risk
7 averse, then probably not. If risk aversion still is
8 the predominant factor underlying the negotiation, then
9 it's possible, but the two are in tension, and it's not
10 possible to tell from just those two descriptions as to
11 what the likely outcome will be.

12 Q. Okay. Well, let's talk a little more about
13 outcomes of trial. Let's go to tab 5. This is
14 testimony of Professor Bresnahan, and if you go to
15 1163, line 23, then going on to the next page in 5, let
16 me read that, and this was cross examination by Mr.
17 Niels.

18 "QUESTION: The outcome of that trial is going
19 to depend namely, isn't it, on the intrinsic merits of
20 the case?

21 "ANSWER: Yes, though it may also depend on the
22 parties' behavior in it, which is why I said not
23 necessarily.

24 "QUESTION: And it's going to depend,
25 therefore, on the evidence that's presented and the

1 relevant law, correct?

2 "ANSWER: Yes."

3 Do you agree with Professor Bresnahan?

4 A. Yes, I do. I think, you know, the merits are
5 something that always inform the judgment of the
6 parties in settlement. Certainly the merits will
7 inform the outcome if litigation is conducted. And as
8 I said earlier, the combination of these factors, not
9 any one of them in isolation, can create a great deal
10 of uncertainty.

11 The merits are the merits, but then we have the
12 Federal Circuit with a 50 percent reversal rate. So,
13 the merits are very important but have to be kept in
14 the proper context.

15 Q. Are there a set of reasons -- we talked earlier
16 about the fact that you can't always come to a
17 settlement. Are there a set of reasons that you think
18 about about why firms can't always settle litigations?

19 A. Well, as I said earlier, there may be
20 inadequate risk aversion, too great a degree of
21 optimism. There may be too much time, there may be not
22 enough time. There may be no one there to catalyze the
23 settlement.

24 As a mediator, I've often been envious of a
25 judge who can twist some arms. All I have is the sense

1 of moral persuasion to convince them it's in their best
2 interests to settle, but if you can't bring them
3 together at the right time, then a settlement on that
4 day is just not possible.

5 Q. In your role as a mediator, what would you do
6 at this point in order to attempt to achieve
7 settlement?

8 A. Let me kind of set the stage for you so that
9 you picture in your mind's eye what's really going on
10 here. You know, keep in mind, you have two parties who
11 are in litigation, and litigation has been likened by
12 some writers to war. This is an enemy of my company.
13 I think perhaps it's an extreme analogy, but
14 nevertheless, there is a real sense of animosity, maybe
15 not hatred, but truly animosity in the room.

16 These are people trying to harm my business. I
17 have the better case. They should just see that and go
18 away. And as the mediator or the settlement agent is
19 trying to bring them closer together, concessions are
20 easily made at the outset, but the parties' positions
21 tend to rigidify at some point in the negotiation, and
22 there's a gap between them.

23 A skilled mediator will recognize that -- you
24 don't want to push the parties beyond that, because now
25 you're bringing into the dynamic the sense of

1 capitulation, and people don't like to capitulate. It
2 may be a sense that, you know, I've given up enough,
3 I'm not going to move another inch, a sense of pride.
4 It may be, you know, millions for defense, not a penny
5 for tribute.

6 There are a lot of human emotions that people
7 bring into that negotiating session that get them to
8 the point where they say I'm not going to bend another
9 inch, and for a mediator to push further is
10 counter-productive.

11 So, now, when you recognize that the parties
12 are about as close as they're going to get on their --
13 under these circumstances, you take in essence an
14 excursion from the dispute. Now we're asking these
15 people who had that animosity, who have this really
16 contentious problem between them that may affect the
17 livelihoods of a lot of people and the welfare of the
18 company, to put that aside, to not think about it, to
19 defocus from it and to go off into another -- another
20 place in their mind, so to speak, and now begin to work
21 collaboratively to work develop some extrinsic value to
22 bridge that gap.

23 You know, the -- I'm not a psychologist, but I
24 see an awful lot of psychology played out in these
25 kinds of settings, and you're asking people to be

1 creative, to be imaginative, and at times I've asked
2 them even to be playful in what they think about and
3 how they might be able to find an opportunity to
4 develop value outside the dispute, defocusing from the
5 dispute, because that will impede their ability to be
6 creative, but nevertheless, focus on an opportunity to
7 develop a new relationship, maybe customer-supplier,
8 licensor-licensee, form an alliance, but somehow enter
9 into a relationship outside the dispute which has value
10 in a very creative sense.

11 And then when they're through, if they're able
12 to do so -- and customarily, if people work hard, they
13 can find these extrinsic values -- then import that
14 back into the dispute and find a way to bridge the gap
15 in the positions. Now you have a global settlement of
16 that dispute.

17 So, that's the environment in which a mediator,
18 whether it be a magistrate judge or a commercial
19 mediator, operates. That's the dynamic.

20 Q. Okay. What would happen if some rule of law
21 chilled the extrinsic value-creating process? How
22 would that affect the prospects of settlement in the
23 matters you've been involved with?

24 A. Well, I find that in at least half the cases
25 that I have been involved in, extrinsic value creation

1 has been absolutely essential to get to done, and what
2 I mean by get to done, there's -- Fisher and Ury from
3 Harvard wrote a wonderful little book called Getting to
4 Yes. It's a great book, and they have written a lot
5 more since then, but the notion of Getting to Yes is
6 yes, I will. What's more important to me is getting to
7 done, which is yes, I have.

8 If extrinsic value creation is taken out of the
9 repertoire of the mediator, then at least in my
10 experience, half of the settlements that I got through
11 I could not have achieved at all. I don't know about
12 how the dynamics would play out in other cases, but
13 certainly it would have a profound and negative impact
14 on my practice and I believe the practice of other
15 mediators.

16 Q. In your settlement mediation practice, can you
17 tell us how you specifically go about attempting to
18 achieve settlement, what kinds of techniques you use?

19 A. Well, first we recognize there's a gap -- if
20 there weren't a gap, they would have settled -- and
21 somehow we have to bridge it, and the idea is not --
22 you don't need to over-create a lot of extra value.
23 Keep in mind that there's a central dispute which is
24 the real problem. You're trying to bridge a gap with
25 this mediation.

1 So, the first thing I look around for, either
2 if I'm the party or if I'm the mediator I will comport
3 the parties to look around for, is something to trade.
4 What do you already own that you could trade to the
5 other party that would have sufficient value to them to
6 permit them to settle the main dispute? If you don't
7 already own something you can trade, how easy would it
8 be to acquire something to trade? And there are a lot
9 of examples of that.

10 Companies -- Micron Technology is one that
11 comes to mind, has when they have been engaged in
12 patent infringement disputes sought to purchase
13 intellectual property rights from third parties that
14 they can use to bridge the gap in positions, but they
15 do it in a way where they can leverage, that the
16 purchase price of the property to trade is less than
17 the value of the gap. So, purchasing rights to trade.

18 In some cases, I -- in my own company, we've
19 created value that we can trade, intellectual property
20 value that we know would be of value to the other side.
21 So, however you look at it, the first thing is what can
22 I trade? Very common, I think most mediators will go
23 there in the first instance.

24 Beyond that, it becomes part of this creative
25 process I mentioned earlier, to be imaginative in

1 trying to find values, especially values where the two
2 parties might view something in somewhat different
3 lights, where one party can create something that costs
4 it very little but it has greater value to the
5 recipient.

6 So, in some cases, one in particular that I
7 mention in my report, they created some script that
8 then could be used for the purchase of product. This
9 was a patent infringement litigation that had gone on
10 for a long time. There was an awful lot of animosity.
11 There was a lot at stake. And the basic concept there
12 was to convert the plaintiff patent owner into a
13 customer of the defendant patent infringer but to do so
14 in a way that allowed both of them to realize value.

15 So, the infringer in that case issued a large
16 quantity of script to be used by the plaintiff to
17 purchase the infringer's product, but there was an
18 limit on how it could be used, and in that case it was
19 not just the use of a script but the use of a script
20 plus money in order to purchase the product, which
21 guaranteed to the seller not its normal profit margin
22 but at least they weren't selling at a loss. They
23 still obtained some profit.

24 Also, the script couldn't be used for 100
25 percent of the requirements of that party. So, there

1 would be additional purchases at full value. But it
2 became a balancing of creating value in a commercial
3 transaction.

4 I've used a stock bridge to get the two parties
5 who are facing a gap in their positions and not willing
6 to concede any further, and in that case one party who
7 had a stock that was rising in the stock market
8 contributed about half the value in stock of the amount
9 of the gap with the guarantee that within a year that
10 stock would be equivalent to the full value of the gap.
11 It allowed the capital markets to supply what the
12 parties didn't want to supply themselves.

13 And we go on with a lot of examples, but I
14 guess the point of this is simply that one needs to be
15 imaginative, one needs to be creative and not just stop
16 when the parties say I can't settle, even though
17 there's a gap in our positions, and go through some --
18 in the first instance some predictable ways of creating
19 value, and then when that doesn't work, some more
20 creative ways of creating value, but extrinsic value
21 creation is the objective goal here.

22 Q. Well, if it's value creating, extrinsic value
23 creation, why don't the parties just do the extrinsic
24 value-creating deal separately and just keep
25 litigating?

1 A. I would like you to repicture in your mind's
2 eye what I described to you earlier, a lot of
3 hostility, you know, people who are not getting along
4 together, and now you've asked them to take a journey
5 away from a dispute which has gone on perhaps for years
6 and try to find a valuable relationship between them
7 outside the source of that dispute.

8 Now, the reason they're doing it is to settle
9 the dispute. They're not off trying to become friends.
10 You can't delink them. They live together. They are
11 interdependent. They are multiple components of the
12 same transaction. It fundamentally makes no sense.
13 It's illogical to me to think about just doing the
14 extrinsic deal, then going back and litigating.

15 Some of these situations require a lot of
16 cooperation between the parties. I'll give you an
17 example from just ten days ago, a successful mediation
18 after two years of a dispute that I on behalf of my
19 company had with another party over patent
20 infringement. It was not in litigation, but we settled
21 with the aid of a mediator from JAMS who helped us
22 narrow the gap and then helped us find some extrinsic
23 value.

24 In that case the extrinsic value was found in
25 an OEM relationship between the parties and an

1 opportunity they have -- their products are
2 complimentary products -- to do some co-selling. Well,
3 if you are going to take the OEM relationship and the
4 co-selling and try to pursue that at the same time the
5 parties are engaged in a rancorous dispute, it's
6 unlikely that's going to happen. You can't delink
7 them.

8 It might be that there's a payment of money
9 involved, and if you're going to delink them, what you
10 end up doing, in effect, one party is funding the other
11 party's attack on its company. It's making it more
12 able to continue the litigation. These are all kinds
13 of dysfunctional approaches to resolution as opposed to
14 things that promote a sound resolution of a problem, an
15 enduring resolution of the problem.

16 Q. So, why don't parties just forget about
17 extrinsic value-creating deals and just keep
18 litigating?

19 A. Well, for the reason I mentioned earlier, that
20 it may require them just to capitulate, and very few
21 parties at the end of the day are willing to
22 capitulate. It would take an enormous amount of risk
23 aversion and a real failure in optimism before you get
24 a party to do that, and that just doesn't happen.

25 Q. Are you familiar with the term "win-win"

1 propositions?

2 A. Yes, I am.

3 Q. And what does that mean?

4 A. Well, it's now I think in the vernacular. It
5 refers to a transaction where both parties are able to
6 walk away from the transaction believing that it has
7 great value to them and appropriate equal value, to be
8 contrasted from win-lose, which perhaps a few decades
9 ago was the way a lot of people negotiated, you know,
10 how they could engage in some -- you know, if not sharp
11 practice, you know, at least one upmanship on the
12 other side, and the literature showed over a period of
13 time that those kinds of deals really were -- there was
14 a false sense of a win there, because the party in the
15 posture of the loser, especially if there was a
16 relationship, customer and supplier relationship, would
17 feel so bad about the outcome that it would destroy the
18 relationship.

19 Then, of course, there are the lose-lose
20 relationships, which we rarely see because there's
21 nothing in it for anybody, but there's a large
22 literature that's been written over the years on this
23 whole concept of win-win or creative problem solving
24 some call it.

25 Q. Can a branded patent holder win in a settlement

1 with a generic in a patent litigation without delaying
2 the entry of the generic?

3 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor, lacks
4 foundation. I don't know that we've established this
5 expert has any experience in Hatch-Waxman cases or
6 pharmaceutical cases for that matter.

7 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, I'll ask the question
8 another way, then.

9 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

10 Q. I mean, in general, when you have a patent
11 holder in the market, in the matters in which you've
12 been experienced, can you have a win situation without
13 throwing the other guy out of the market?

14 A. Surely, and in fact, I mean, I guess -- I guess
15 I couldn't put figures on how common it is, but it's
16 common enough, you know, there are a lot of times when
17 people will sort of split up the rights of a patent, if
18 I could use that term, and in fact, I've engaged in
19 those kinds of patent-splitting arrangements, so that,
20 for example, you might divide a patent along
21 territorial lines. It used to be more common than it
22 is today.

23 More common now is dividing a patent along
24 fields of use. It may be that the other party can
25 address a certain market sector that's important to it

1 without unduly interfering with the position of the
2 other party. So, a field of use is not a bad way to
3 think about splitting a patent and allowing the party
4 to win, if you will.

5 Another common approach in my experience is
6 performance, so that, for example, in a hypothetical,
7 because I don't want to give a real example that would
8 give away the parties, say you had a microprocessor.
9 It may be that you can sell a microprocessor up to a
10 gigahertz but not above using this patented technology,
11 and so performance characteristics become a
12 discriminating factor, and indeed, you could mix and
13 match. It's performance characteristics under a
14 gigahertz and under a field of use of only personal
15 computers. So, you can begin to divide up and split up
16 the rights amongst the parties. It could be you can
17 implement this technology in hardware but not software.

18 So, there are a lot of ways that the patent
19 owner can protect its position and the infringer can
20 still be accorded some rights that ultimately amount to
21 a win, a win for both.

22 Q. Let's turn to tab 14, and this is testimony of
23 Professor Bresnahan again, and we're at 526 of the
24 record at line 19, and I'm going to read that until
25 line 1 of the next page.

1 "QUESTION: Professor, why did you conclude
2 that the payment in the settlement between Upsher and
3 Schering was made for delay?

4 "ANSWER: There are a number of bases for that.
5 The -- we begin with the substantial incentives of the
6 parties to delay in such a way and the contract between
7 them which links payment to an entry date, that's the
8 beginning."

9 We know you're not an antitrust lawyer, so I'm
10 only asking you a question about your fields of
11 competence.

12 In your experience in patent negotiation, do
13 parties try to obey the law in the context of
14 settlement?

15 A. I'd say uniformly. I in my experience have
16 never seen a situation where the parties were not
17 mindful of the law and their need to adhere to the law.

18 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor, I'd move
19 to strike. This seems to be beyond the scope of this
20 witness' expertise as to whether or not companies obey
21 the law. That's something that is either -- a common
22 experience to all lawyers and people in the legal
23 profession but certainly not something that I would say
24 which Mr. O'Shaughnessy has expertise in.

25 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, two points, Your Honor.

1 First, I asked him for an answer within his field of
2 expertise, and two, I'm asking him in his position as
3 a -- as a mediator, when he's -- when people are, for
4 example, told that something's illegal, what do they
5 then do? So, I think this is specifically within his
6 two fields of expertise.

7 MS. CREIGHTON: There's also been no foundation
8 laid, Your Honor, that that, in fact, has ever come up
9 in Mr. O'Shaughnessy's mediation practice or that the
10 parties would tell him about what their thought
11 processes are in the event that it does.

12 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Professor Bresnahan has given
13 an incentive that -- given a -- has basically argued
14 that people who have incentives to break the law will
15 break the law. Mr. O'Shaughnessy's experience about
16 whether that's, in fact, true through his mediation
17 process is within his fields of expertise, I think is
18 very relevant.

19 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'll overrule it to the --
20 I'll overrule the portion beyond the scope of his
21 expertise, because the question limited it to his
22 fields of competence; however, I'm sustaining it to the
23 extent it asks him do people try to do something to the
24 extent it's calling for him to tell me the intent of
25 the parties. He can tell me what he knows. Thank you.

1 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

2 Q. Why don't you explain what you know.

3 A. Let me approach it this way: When mediating,
4 as I said, you take people on this excursion for
5 extrinsic value creation. You've asked them to be
6 creative, and you've asked them to be imaginative, and
7 sometimes I've even asked them to be playful in the way
8 they think about how do you create value outside the
9 scope of this dispute.

10 They are businessmen and businesswomen involved
11 in the process, and they take this very seriously, and
12 there are times when, in their imagination or in their
13 efforts to be creative, they step over the line of
14 what's legal. So, they might say, well, could we do
15 this or could we do that, or I have an idea, let's do
16 it this way, and they're counseled, no, you can't do
17 that. That would be illegal. And the answer is, oh,
18 okay. Well, let's try something else.

19 So, they're -- when you ask people to be
20 creative without the bounds of legality around it, they
21 may come to a point where they dream up a potential
22 transaction which just can't be implemented lawfully.
23 In my experience, whenever that's happened, people have
24 backed off when they've been told you can't do it.

25 Q. You mentioned earlier that you -- that you and

1 other mediators and judges try to exert pressure on
2 people to settle. How do you exert pressure on people
3 to settle?

4 A. Well, as a judge, it's a lot easier I have to
5 say. There's a lot of arm twisting, at least
6 potentially. As a mediator, you're really trying to
7 bring the people together in a consensual process, but
8 there still is a sense of pressure that you can create.

9 Again, go back to that picture I tried to paint
10 for you. You've taken people outside the scope of the
11 dispute, and you're telling them you now have a chance
12 to settle this case. There's a pressure to do so. The
13 mediation may have gone on for a day or two. People
14 have started to have an investment in the process.
15 There may be some real momentum forming toward a
16 resolution. They really want to settle in most cases.

17 Now you galvanize that pressure in a particular
18 way. Don't lose the moment. It's sort of like the
19 fourth quarter in an NBA game, you know, the clock is
20 ticking, and the closer we get to the end, the more the
21 pressure is to win here, and to win here is finding a
22 way to get to done, and so you want to galvanize that
23 investment and galvanize the pressure, continue adding
24 the pressure to it and tell them you've got to come up
25 with a solution to this. If you don't do it now, you

1 will lose it, because that dispute that we put aside
2 isn't static.

3 The positions that we established just earlier
4 today or yesterday in this hypothetical won't remain
5 the same. They will change. This is your one chance
6 to seize that opportunity, get it, strike while the
7 iron is hot. There is no time for a lot of analysis.
8 There is no time for, you know, endless due diligence.
9 The idea is come up with a solution to this problem now
10 and bridge that gap.

11 And if you do it -- if you Knute Rockne them so
12 to speak, you can get to done.

13 Q. Okay, let's go to tab 17. This is more
14 testimony from Professor Bresnahan, and I will read
15 this testimony. It starts at 1021 of the record, goes
16 from line 7 to line 23.

17 "QUESTION: Now, let's say life isn't so simple
18 and the parties say we want one global deal tonight and
19 we want to get this settled. Are you telling me that
20 Schering-Plough needs to do some kind of ordinary
21 course of business assessment of the licensing in order
22 to be safe with this valuation calculation, sir?

23 "ANSWER: In order to be safe? The -- I
24 would -- you asked me this question in deposition, and
25 I answered it as I just answered it. If you wanted to

1 be safe, the thing to do would be break the linkage.

2 "QUESTION: So, can you sitting here today tell
3 me of one transaction that Upsher-Smith and
4 Schering-Plough could have entered into in a single,
5 global transaction that would have, you know, readily
6 satisfied the Bresnahan test, in one, single,
7 integrated agreement?

8 "ANSWER: No, I can't. If it -- if it had both
9 of the elements in it, no."

10 If the FTC were to adopt the Bresnahan
11 approach, how would that affect the settlement process?

12 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor insofar
13 as we haven't established a foundation that Mr.
14 O'Shaughnessy knows what the reference is to the two
15 elements that Professor Bresnahan referred to in his
16 answer.

17 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Sustained.

18 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Where were the two elements
19 in this answer?

20 MS. CREIGHTON: "If it had both of the elements
21 in it, no."

22 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'm sustaining it, Counselor,
23 because you're asking him to apply tests that I don't
24 know he knows yet.

25 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, I --

1 JUDGE CHAPPELL: So, you need a foundation.

2 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, I can have him answer,
3 Your Honor, based on the first question and answer,
4 which goes to line 16, if that's the problem.

5 JUDGE CHAPPELL: You're asking him a
6 hypothetical or a question based on the Bresnahan
7 approach.

8 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Yes.

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'm not allowing it unless you
10 show me that he knows what the Bresnahan approach is.
11 Is that clear?

12 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Okay -- oh, okay, now I
13 understand. I'm sorry.

14 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Proceed.

15 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: I'm sorry, Your Honor.

16 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

17 Q. Can you tell us your understanding of the
18 Bresnahan approach?

19 A. Well, as it's related to the testimony you just
20 read, one is that one needs to engage in customary due
21 diligence in the extrinsic value creation transaction.
22 Secondly, that the two can be delinked, that if -- if
23 it's a worthy transaction in the scope of settling the
24 dispute, it's equally worthy outside the scope of the
25 dispute. That's what I understand this to mean.

1 Q. Well, whether it's the Bresnahan approach or
2 not, that understanding, if that were the case, how
3 would that affect settlements?

4 A. It either would make most settlements difficult
5 or impossible to achieve. Together, it would -- I
6 think it would damn most settlements. I don't think
7 you could reach a settlement with those conditions
8 imposed.

9 Q. And why is that?

10 A. Well, there is this pressure to settle. In
11 this extrinsic value-creating deal, you're relying on
12 the pressure to settle and the desire of the parties to
13 resolve their dispute. To put together a value-bearing
14 transaction that is adequate to bridge the gap in their
15 positions -- keep in mind, the big problem is really
16 big. This outside deal may be relatively small in
17 comparison to it.

18 There isn't time to stop and do a lot of due
19 diligence. If you were to stop and lose the momentum
20 of settlement, there's no guarantee that when you come
21 back in weeks or months later that those two positions
22 are still going to have the same momentum. Things
23 happen in litigation. It moves on. It ebbs and flows.
24 The parties may become more polarized, not less
25 polarized over that time.

1 Now you have got a value-creating transaction
2 which you've worked very hard on, you've done your due
3 diligence, and what you find is now it's inadequate to
4 fill the gap that has grown. So, that's one reason.

5 MS. CREIGHTON: I'm sorry, Mr. O'Shaughnessy,
6 excuse me.

7 I didn't think that -- necessarily that the
8 question called for it, but to the extent that Mr.
9 O'Shaughnessy's testifying about the necessity for due
10 diligence in the context of settlement, that is not
11 within the scope of his report of his proffered
12 testimony. So, I would object on that ground, Your
13 Honor.

14 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, I think Mr.
15 O'Shaughnessy was talking about the time pressures of
16 getting these things done, and that was the context of
17 this, and, you know, those pressures were all part of
18 his report.

19 JUDGE CHAPPELL: So, he is not testifying as a
20 due diligence expert?

21 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: No.

22 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Then it's sustained, but
23 effectively there is no harm. We're not accepting this
24 as a due diligence expert.

25 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, I don't believe

1 that the issue of the practicality of entering into a
2 settlement now versus over a period of time was within
3 the scope of his testimony either, whether specifically
4 for the purposes of due diligence or otherwise. So, I
5 would object on that ground as well.

6 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, as I said, all I'm --
7 you know, all Mr. O'Shaughnessy is talking about is the
8 time pressures of settlement and how to get to yes in a
9 short period of time, and so that's clearly within the
10 context of his report. It was all about how to do that
11 through extrinsic value creation.

12 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'll allow it. Go ahead.

13 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Okay.

14 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

15 Q. What is your understanding of a reverse
16 payment?

17 A. Well, the only understanding I have of it is in
18 the context of this case, and it's net cash
19 consideration flowing from the patent holder to the
20 infringer is the working definition I've been using.

21 Q. So, now, going back to the issue of settling
22 deals with extrinsic transactions without reverse
23 payments, couldn't part -- and -- couldn't parties
24 continue to do such settlements with extrinsic value
25 creation just by establishing that there was no reverse

1 payment in the extrinsic value creation?

2 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor. As I
3 think the witness indicated in his previous answer, he
4 has no experience with settlements involving reverse
5 payments, so I don't think he has any basis to
6 speculate on what would happen in a case where a
7 reverse payment was offered but, in fact, was not
8 pursued.

9 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, I think actually what
10 I'm saying is, I'm talking about doing extrinsic value
11 creation without a reverse payment. That was the
12 premise of the question, not that there is reverse
13 payment in the -- in the hypothetical I've offered.

14 JUDGE CHAPPELL: So, do you want to restate the
15 question?

16 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: I can say it again.

17 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

18 Q. Going back to the issue of settling deals with
19 extrinsic transactions without reverse payments,
20 couldn't parties continue to do such settlements by
21 just -- by just establishing that there was no reverse
22 payment in the extrinsic transaction?

23 MS. CREIGHTON: And I object again, Your Honor,
24 because the witness has no experience with settlements
25 involving reverse payments. I don't know that he could

1 testify as to what --

2 THE WITNESS: I may have misspoken if that's
3 the impression I gave you. I don't want to jump in --

4 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Well, if the objection is for
5 lack of foundation, I'll sustain it. I think we need
6 to clarify whether or not he knows anything about
7 reverse payments. If he doesn't, then let's not ask
8 him about them, okay?

9 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Okay, okay.

10 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Proceed.

11 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

12 Q. Could you tell us what you understand about
13 reverse payments in your experience?

14 A. Yes, and I hope I haven't misled the attorney
15 here. I am using a definition which I understand
16 within the context of this case. I never talked about
17 reverse payments. I've never used that terminology.
18 So, I'm trying to be consistent with what everybody
19 else in the courtroom understands it to be, which is a
20 net flow of cash from the patent holder to the
21 infringer. It's not that I haven't seen them, but I've
22 never used that terminology.

23 Now, if you would ask your question again --
24 and I hope I haven't confused people with my answer.

25 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, have we

1 established enough of a foundation to go forward with
2 this question?

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

4 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Okay.

5 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

6 Q. Let me ask the question again.

7 Going back to the issue of settling deals with
8 extrinsic transactions without reverse payment,
9 couldn't parties continue to do such settlements by
10 just proving to the FTC that there was no reverse
11 payment in the extrinsic transaction?

12 A. I think the answer theoretically is yes and
13 practically no, and here's the practical problem. When
14 I have a patent litigation, if I'm the party in the
15 sense of I'm representing my company or if I'm an
16 outside counsel or if I'm a mediator, the parties know
17 an awful lot about their dispute. They've spent
18 perhaps years with it. In some cases, unfortunately,
19 may have spent millions of dollars to get to the point
20 of understanding their case, its strengths and
21 weaknesses, the other side's case and its strengths and
22 weaknesses.

23 They have come together out of a desire to
24 settle, and they have an exquisite knowledge about that
25 subject matter. Now they're going to enter into an

1 extrinsic value-creating transaction, and they're going
2 to have to handicap the likelihood that they could
3 convince the FTC or some other tribunal that there is
4 no net payment. They may not understand exactly how
5 that's going to be done. They may not understand the
6 quality of proof necessary.

7 It may be that while they have a belief that if
8 they're really risk averse, they're going to say, you
9 know, risk aversion drove me to want to settle, but now
10 I'm so risk averse that the problem handed to me about
11 proving that there's no net payment keeps me from
12 settling the case. So, it's a practical problem more
13 than a theoretical problem. It's a problem of proof
14 and a problem of perception and a new source of
15 uncertainty.

16 Q. Let me ask you some hypothetical questions
17 about what would happen under the following
18 circumstances to your ability to settle disputes.
19 Suppose a brand name company told you that the generic
20 had asked for money and the brand name told you that it
21 said loudly and clearly no money. Would you think you
22 could facilitate a settlement using extrinsic
23 transaction under the approach Professor Bresnahan has
24 taken?

25 A. No, I couldn't.

1 Q. And why is that?

2 A. Not any longer. The fact is that -- again, I
3 want to take you back in your mind's eye, I keep going
4 back to that same hypothetical. I have asked parties
5 to be creative and think about lots of things. I
6 goaded them into saying something about money, but now,
7 as soon as they have, under this test, once -- you
8 can't unring the bell, because now, as soon as that
9 becomes an issue, even if the other party says no,
10 there will be a perception, because it was asked for,
11 it was granted.

12 As a mediator, I couldn't in good faith pursue
13 the settlement further. I couldn't lead the parties to
14 a resolution of their problem, because as I say, you
15 can't unring the bell.

16 Q. Okay. Suppose the brand name company told you
17 that it evaluated potential extrinsic value-creating
18 transactions and that the analysts had told you that
19 the brand name -- told the brand name that it was a
20 good deal -- let me read that again.

21 Suppose the brand name company told you that it
22 evaluated a potential extrinsic value-creating
23 transaction and an analyst had told the company that it
24 was a good deal, would that solve the problem? Could
25 you go forward with the extrinsic value creation?

1 A. Not under the theory of the case as I
2 understand it from complaint counsel, because I believe
3 that's what happened here.

4 Q. Okay. Suppose the brand name company told you
5 that its analyst had said it was a good deal but it
6 normally engages in more extensive due diligence, how
7 would that affect your actions as a mediator?

8 A. Not at all. Not at all. I still have the same
9 problem. I -- it would be unsafe, to use somebody
10 else's words, to proceed further with the settlement
11 once that had been broached.

12 Q. Okay. Well, so, what's the problem? Are
13 settlements a good thing?

14 A. I think settlements aren't just a good thing,
15 they're an essential thing. There are literally
16 hundreds of thousands of cases filed in courts in the
17 United States every year. The system is set up not
18 just to foster settlement, but it's reliant on it. The
19 system would gridlock if we didn't have settlements.
20 They are absolutely essential.

21 Q. What kind of costs does it add to the court
22 system?

23 A. Well, there's all the social costs that people
24 talk about. It's well documented. You know, the cost
25 that I see that really drives me in my decision making,

1 for every dollar spent in R&D, about 27 cents is spent
2 in patent litigation. I don't know about elasticity,
3 I'm not an economist.

4 What I do know is that if you get rid of
5 settlements, that 27 cents goes up and the dollar goes
6 down. There's less money available for innovation and
7 more money gets sucked into the litigation process.
8 So, for this economy to work well, settlements are
9 essential, especially patent settlements.

10 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: No further questions, Your
11 Honor.

12 MR. CURRAN: Nothing from Upsher, Your Honor.

13 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Cross?

14 CROSS EXAMINATION

15 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

16 Q. Good morning, Mr. O'Shaughnessy.

17 A. Good morning.

18 Q. Nice to see you again.

19 Mr. O'Shaughnessy, you have never negotiated
20 the resolution of a dispute in a Hatch-Waxman case,
21 correct?

22 A. That's correct.

23 Q. And you've never been involved in a
24 Hatch-Waxman case as a party either, have you?

25 A. That's correct.

1 Q. The only patent case involving pharmaceuticals
2 that you've had any experience with was over 20 years
3 ago and involved Sensodyne Toothpaste, correct?

4 A. That's correct.

5 Q. You don't consider yourself an expert in
6 Hatch-Waxman cases or the pharmaceutical industry,
7 correct?

8 A. I do not.

9 Q. You have no idea whether payments by the patent
10 holder to the infringer arise in one out of two
11 Hatch-Waxman settlements or one out of a thousand,
12 correct?

13 A. That's correct.

14 Q. You've been involved in about 50 to 60 patent
15 cases as either a party or a neutral. Is that correct?

16 A. Correct.

17 Q. In all of those cases, you're not aware of any
18 case settling in which the patent holder paid the
19 infringer a cash payment up front at the time of
20 settlement, correct?

21 A. A patent --

22 Q. Would you like me to reread the question?

23 A. Yes, I'm thinking through the question.

24 I believe that's correct, yes.

25 Q. A rule that prohibited such reverse payments

1 would only affect a few settlements, correct?

2 A. I don't know that --

3 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Objection, Your Honor. He
4 said he doesn't know how many settlements there are in
5 the Hatch-Waxman context with reverse payments, so I
6 don't see the foundation for the question.

7 MS. CREIGHTON: The question, Your Honor, was
8 asking about his experience in handling dozens of
9 patent cases as either a neutral or a party. It wasn't
10 limited to Hatch-Waxman cases, and the previous answer
11 had established that he's not aware of any case
12 settling in all of those cases with a cash payment up
13 front at the time of settlement.

14 So, so far as -- why don't I rephrase the
15 question, Your Honor.

16 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay, you're rephrasing, all
17 right.

18 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

19 Q. So far as you're aware, Mr. O'Shaughnessy,
20 isn't it correct that a rule that prohibited such
21 payments therefore would affect only a few settlements,
22 correct?

23 A. I don't know that to be true, no.

24 Q. Is it correct, Mr. O'Shaughnessy, that a rule
25 that prohibited reverse payments, to your knowledge,

1 would affect only a few settlements?

2 A. Again, I don't know that to be true, and I'm
3 trying to separate my experience in the past from a
4 generalization that you now have stated in going
5 forward, and you're using that phrase, "net cash
6 payments," and I'm thinking about consideration.

7 Consideration can flow in lots of different
8 ways. We've discussed it before. I don't want to go
9 too far with your question --

10 Q. Well, let me ask you this: As you understand
11 Professor Bresnahan's rule, it would only affect
12 settlements in a few cases, correct?

13 A. I don't know that to be the case.

14 Q. Why don't I show you, if I can turn it on -- I
15 apologize, Your Honor. I'm going to have to zoom here.

16 A. I can't read this at all, I'm sorry.

17 Q. I apologize, Mr. O'Shaughnessy, let me just
18 figure out how to zoom in. The problem is that it's a
19 run-on question and answer, but I show you page 114,
20 line 17 to page 115, line 3. It asked:

21 "QUESTION: What is your understanding of the
22 rule that Professor Bresnahan articulates?

23 "ANSWER: Well, part of it is that a reverse
24 payment is -- what he calls a reverse payment, there
25 virtually would be a per se rule against it, that there

1 could be no flow of what he calls net consideration
2 from the patentee to the entrant, and that were one to
3 detect that, it's a litmus test for
4 anti-competitiveness, and that there would be a
5 conclusive presumption against those kinds of
6 transactions where any kind of extrinsic value creation
7 that contributed to a payment from the patentee to the
8 entrant would be condemned."

9 Then you go on with your answer, and then the
10 question, page 115, line 14:

11 "QUESTION: So, you would agree that it would
12 affect only a few settlements?

13 "ANSWER: Well, relatively speaking, in
14 comparison to all the cases that are filed, yes.

15 "QUESTION: Wouldn't it be fair to say that
16 you've never been involved in or heard of a settlement
17 that would be proscribed by that rule?

18 "ANSWER: You mean other than what we're
19 engaged in now?

20 "QUESTION: Correct.

21 "ANSWER: Yeah, well, that would -- that's
22 true."

23 Did you give -- did I ask you those questions
24 and did you give those answers?

25 A. No, I --

1 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Objection. Can you read all
2 that off the screen or do you need a copy of your
3 deposition?

4 THE WITNESS: It might be helpful with a copy.
5 I can read a lot of it. What I can't read is the part
6 in between that was left out.

7 MS. CREIGHTON: May I approach, Your Honor?

8 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

9 THE WITNESS: Page 114? This began at 114?

10 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

11 Q. Page 114 was the preceding question that set
12 the predicate for your -- for the questions and answers
13 in which you were articulating your understanding of
14 Professor Bresnahan's rule regarding reverse payments,
15 and then the focus is on page 115, starting at line 14
16 and going through line 23.

17 A. (Document review.)

18 Q. Did you give -- did I ask you those questions
19 and did you give those answers?

20 A. Well, I did, yes. Yes, this is an accurate
21 transcription if that's what you're asking.

22 Q. Now, it's fair to say, isn't it, Mr.
23 O'Shaughnessy, that in assessing the objective merits
24 of a case, it's your opinion that you can only
25 determine within some rough parameters as opposed to

1 with great precision? Is that correct?

2 A. Would you please repeat that question?

3 Q. Is it fair to say that in assessing the
4 objective merits of a case, it's your opinion that you
5 can only determine within some rough parameters as
6 opposed to with great precision?

7 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Objection, I think it's
8 ambiguous as to the context of when you're evaluating
9 this case.

10 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Overruled. I'll let the court
11 reporter read it back and see if he can answer.

12 THE WITNESS: I think I understand the
13 question.

14 The best way to determine the outcome is to go
15 to the outcome. Now, cases ebb and flow, and it
16 depends on what stage of the case you're in as to what
17 degree of precision you can have with respect to the
18 likely outcome.

19 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

20 Q. It --

21 A. So, I mean, the merits of the case always
22 inform one's judgment on what's going to happen. The
23 precision with which one can gauge the possible outcome
24 on the merits will change.

25 Q. Okay. And isn't it, in fact, the case, Mr.

1 O'Shaughnessy, that as a case ebbs and flows, the odds
2 may change from 60 percent to 70 percent to 50 percent
3 of the lifetime of the case?

4 A. Well, they will swing that wildly, but they
5 certainly will change with rulings of the court, the
6 discovery of new evidence. It depends on where you
7 are. The closer you get to trial, the less likely you
8 would expect those kinds of wild swings. Early in the
9 case, yes.

10 Q. Let me direct your attention to page 156 of
11 your deposition, lines 8 to 14. The question, I
12 believe, is actually on page 154, lines 4 to 6. The
13 question was:

14 "QUESTION: What kind of parameters would you
15 say you think reasonable to achieve in assessing the
16 objectiveness of a case?"

17 And your answer continues, and in particular at
18 lines 8 to 14, you state, "It -- there are too many
19 things that can happen over the period as the case ebbs
20 and flows, and I may tell my client today we've got a
21 60 percent chance of winning. After the ruling on a
22 motion, I could say we have a 70 percent chance. And
23 after the next ruling, I could say we have a 50 percent
24 chance. It's on -- there's just too much uncertainty
25 going forward."

1 Did --

2 A. I think that's true, that's true, yes, going
3 through the case. As I say, when you get down the road
4 to a jury, that may not be true.

5 Q. Summary judgment can affect the outcome of a
6 case, correct?

7 A. It can be dispositive.

8 Q. And also change your assessment of the odds
9 even if it's not dispositive, correct?

10 A. Yes, it can.

11 Q. A ruling on what goes to the jury and what
12 evidence won't go to the jury can affect a case?

13 A. Yes, it can.

14 Q. And this can result in wild swings of the
15 assessment of your odds, correct?

16 A. As I say, earlier in the case you get wilder
17 swings than later in the case. You would hope not to
18 go from a 70 to a 50 percent change as they're swearing
19 the jury.

20 Q. And even in a case on appeal, you might end up
21 with a 50 percent chance of reversal?

22 A. That's a whole new dynamic.

23 Q. And isn't it true, sir, that the less
24 information you have earlier in the case, the less
25 precise you can be in assessing the likely outcome at

1 trial?

2 A. I think that's true of almost everything.

3 Q. Of course, even in cases that have been tried
4 all the way through, you frequently have been surprised
5 by the way evidence has been perceived by fact finders,
6 whether judge or jury, correct?

7 A. That's correct.

8 Q. Arguments and evidence that you believe
9 dispositive have been overlooked or have been
10 discounted, and seemingly minor points sometimes
11 carried the day, correct?

12 A. I have seen that, yes.

13 Q. Witnesses and their testimony have been
14 disregarded, right?

15 A. Correct.

16 Q. And your experience matches that of most
17 litigators that you know, particularly patent
18 litigators, correct?

19 A. I believe that to be true.

20 Q. So, as a result of all those uncertainties, you
21 personally can't tell the difference between a 70 and a
22 75 percent case, can you?

23 A. Well, I -- in fairness to what we discussed
24 before, I think what I said is there is no substantive
25 difference. It's difficult when you get to a

1 difference between 5 percentage points, because it's
2 not a probability distribution. It's a -- it's meant
3 as a method of communicating important information to a
4 businessman or businesswoman.

5 I think it is meaningful to talk about a
6 difference between 60 and 70 percent. When you talk
7 about the difference between 70 and 75, it starts to
8 create a false impression that one can be so precise
9 with one's statistics that you can actually predict the
10 outcome.

11 The -- maybe a different way to put it, you
12 know, if -- if we talk about a probability when you
13 flip a coin, you know, every time you flip the coin
14 there's some statistical probability it's going to be a
15 head or a tail, or if you're picking socks out of a bag
16 and trying to match them up, there's some statistical
17 probability that they will match. That's not the kind
18 of statistics we're talking about here.

19 Q. The reason that lawyers and clients talk about
20 statistics of the type you're talking about is really
21 as a communications tool. Isn't that correct?

22 A. Absolutely.

23 Q. So, they are not intended to have some kind of
24 mathematical or scientific exactitude, correct?

25 A. Yes, and I would not want to tell a businessman

1 you have a 72 percent chance of winning, because a
2 businessman is likely to believe that. The problem is
3 I want to convey that there is a demonstrable, a
4 palpable risk that we could lose here, and 70 to 75
5 percent, it's hard to tell. I might articulate 70 to
6 75 percent. I'm not sure the hearer would be able to
7 distinguish between 70 and 75, but I do think it's
8 meaningful between 60 and 70 or between 50 and 60, you
9 can do sort of a rough approximation, and the sort of
10 larger swings or larger differences, say this was a
11 significant event and our chances went from 60 to 70 or
12 our chances went from 60 to 50. It's the significance
13 of the event that you're trying to convey, not the
14 precise outcome statistically speaking.

15 Q. So, in the hypothetical, I'd like to change the
16 facts a little bit on the hypothetical that Mr.
17 Schildkraut asked you. Suppose that you're a mediator
18 and parties are coming to you to propose settlement,
19 and instead of having to prove that a particular side
20 deal has some specific extrinsic value, instead, you're
21 told that in order to pass muster legally that you have
22 to be able to prove with some exactitude what the odds
23 were of prevailing in a case, that the patent holder
24 had a 62 percent chance of winning.

25 What effect would that legal rule have on your

1 ability to settle cases?

2 A. Well, I don't know how I'd go about trying to
3 prove I had a 62 percent chance of winning, not with
4 that kind of precision.

5 Q. So, the effect of that kind of rule would be to
6 create considerable uncertainty or to chill
7 settlements, wouldn't it?

8 A. That would be part of the chilling effect, yes,
9 but all you've done is add to my conundrum. The basic
10 problem I have is not understanding -- I guess it's a
11 double negative, not not understanding my case, the
12 substantive case; it's the failure to appreciate how I
13 would prove that there is no net consideration in the
14 extrinsic value-creating deal, whereas -- there are a
15 lot of moving parts, a lot of money that flows in
16 different directions.

17 In that example I gave, there was money going
18 from infringer to patentee, money going from patentee
19 to infringer, on various levels for various things,
20 license fees, product discount fees, there was cash,
21 there was script. I can't figure out with all the
22 arrows where the net ultimately is. I can tell you
23 that both sides believed that they netted out
24 positively, that they both ended up with more than they
25 would have had absent the transaction.

1 Q. Mr. O'Shaughnessy, I just want to make sure you
2 understood my hypothetical, because I was setting aside
3 the one that related to the extrinsic value creation,
4 just a settlement in which to prove that the settlement
5 was reasonable you had to be able to prove up what the
6 true odds were of prevailing in the case. That would
7 have a chilling effect on your ability as a mediator to
8 settle cases, wouldn't it?

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. Mr. O'Shaughnessy, you testified during your
11 direct about the use of extrinsic value creation to
12 bridge the gap between parties to settlement.

13 A. Um-hum.

14 Q. In your experience, such deals may include
15 instances, for example, if one party trades technology
16 rights in one area in exchange for another party's
17 technology rights in another area, correct?

18 A. Correct.

19 Q. So, for example, license to one technology in
20 exchange for a license to another technology, right?

21 A. Correct.

22 Q. The reason that you look for such trades is to
23 use something that's leveragable because cash isn't
24 leveragable. Isn't that right?

25 A. That's correct.

1 Q. Your first objective in a deal, in fact, is to
2 reduce the cash component as best you can. Isn't that
3 right?

4 A. That's correct.

5 Q. It's not always achievable, but that's your
6 first objective.

7 A. It's always the first objective, because as I
8 said, it's not leveragable.

9 Q. In fact, you hate to give up cash when you're
10 negotiating because in your opinion it's way too
11 precious to give to someone else, correct?

12 A. That's correct.

13 Q. Because cash belongs in the executive bonus
14 pool?

15 A. I think that's what I told you, yes.

16 Q. So, if you represent the payer, you're trying
17 to reduce the cash component by using a technology deal
18 instead, right?

19 A. As best one can, yes.

20 Q. And is that a view in your opinion that others
21 would subscribe to who are involved in extrinsic value
22 creation?

23 A. Oh, I -- I believe the answer is yes for the
24 reason that cash isn't leveragable, and if you can
25 create something of value, especially, as I said

1 earlier, where the party giving the value and the party
2 receiving the value can actually value the transaction
3 differently, where the party giving the value can value
4 it kind of low, because it doesn't cost them a lot to
5 give it, but the party receiving it values it high,
6 because it provides or fills a need that they have,
7 that's an ideal situation.

8 Cash isn't capable of doing that. Unless
9 you're in like Argentina or someplace like that, you
10 know, the giving and the taking of money can have a lot
11 of value at the time. Here, if I give you a dollar,
12 I've lost a dollar and you've gained a dollar. It's
13 not leveragable. So, I haven't accomplished a lot as a
14 mediator by just throwing cash at the resolution of a
15 deal, the resolution of a problem.

16 Q. So, just to summarize, it's fair to say, isn't
17 it, that the purpose of using technology side deals in
18 your experience is to minimize the payment of cash,
19 correct?

20 A. Minimize, yes.

21 Q. Okay. So, it's not to provide a reason for the
22 payment of cash, correct?

23 A. I missed your question.

24 Q. The purpose of using side deals is not to
25 create a reason to pay cash, correct?

1 A. I -- you would try to minimize it, yes.

2 Q. You're not an economist, are you, Mr.

3 O'Shaughnessy?

4 A. No, I'm not.

5 Q. I think you mentioned that you drew a
6 distinction between what Professor Bresnahan called
7 optimistic and what you've called wildly optimistic
8 litigants.

9 A. Um-hum.

10 Q. You also identified what you described as a
11 case of indifference. Is that correct?

12 A. Um-hum.

13 Q. But in noting these additional categories, you
14 don't have an opinion as to how these categories would
15 affect Professor Bresnahan's economic analysis,
16 correct?

17 A. No, I -- I see them in my own practice. They
18 have a profound difference to me in resolving disputes.
19 So, for example, a party within Professor Bresnahan's
20 category of optimistic, who may be like 120 percent
21 combined probabilities of success, I see that almost
22 all the time. It's not uncommon to find a litigator
23 who has worked on their case for several years who has
24 a lot of confidence in it and believes she's going to
25 win and believes that, you know, it may be an almost

1 two out of three chance, and to find somebody resisting
2 that with an equal degree of conviction that they're
3 going to win. That's the adversarial system.

4 When we get to something like 130 percent, we
5 certainly have a problem, because now one party is
6 operating with an undue degree of optimism. There's an
7 unrealistic expectation, and for a mediator, that's a
8 very important dynamic to understand. You can
9 facilitate as a facilitative mediator a dispute with
10 about 120 percent. When it gets to about 130 or more,
11 you have to become evaluative.

12 Q. And I appreciate that, Mr. O'Shaughnessy, but
13 the question is, just to make it clear that you and I
14 are on the same wavelength, you don't have an opinion
15 as to whether that distinction, for example, has any
16 effect on Professor Bresnahan's economic analysis,
17 correct?

18 A. Oh, I think it must. I don't know how, but I
19 think it must. I mean, how can you talk about the
20 resolution of a dispute with these dynamics and some
21 kind of economic rule that applies to the determination
22 of the legitimacy of the outcome and then factor out
23 one of the most important dynamics within the dispute
24 itself, which has to do with the degree of optimism or
25 over-optimism? So, I can't tell you how it affects,

1 but I can't believe it wouldn't.

2 Q. Well, you don't have any opinion as to whether
3 these distinctions have any bearing on the facts of
4 this case. Is that right?

5 A. No, I do not.

6 Q. So, so far as you know, these distinctions are
7 irrelevant in the application of Professor Bresnahan's
8 analysis to the facts of this case. Isn't that right?

9 A. I don't know how they apply to this case, so I
10 couldn't offer an opinion on that.

11 Q. And in your experience, most parties are
12 optimistic about their litigation odds, correct?

13 A. Yes.

14 Q. Few parties even have an equal assessment of
15 their odds in litigation, correct?

16 A. It sometimes happens.

17 Q. By equal assessment, you mean an assessment
18 that's objectively accurate. Is that right?

19 A. I can work with that definition.

20 Q. Okay. I take it that it's fair to assume, sir,
21 that if equal assessments are rare that you've seldom
22 encountered a case in which a party was pessimistic
23 about its odds?

24 A. At the outset, yes, not near the end.

25 Q. Okay.

1 A. I mean by the end of the process, and you might
2 take advantage and create some pessimism to drive a
3 party to settlement. It's a function of risk aversion.

4 Q. Okay. Didn't you criticize Professor Bresnahan
5 because you felt that he treated pessimistic odds as
6 some frequent occurrence?

7 A. Yeah, yeah.

8 Q. And so you think that an economic analysis that
9 is based on the predicate that pessimism is common
10 would be inappropriate, correct?

11 A. I believe that to be true, yes.

12 Q. And that would be as true of economists offered
13 I assume by Schering as it would be offered by
14 complaint counsel, correct?

15 A. Well, it's not an even distribution amongst
16 these three categories, if you accept that there are
17 only three. People tend in litigation to be more
18 optimistic than pessimistic or they would have settled
19 long before it got there, and what you find is that you
20 can use pessimism and, in fact, turn people on
21 themselves in their own psychology and say, you know,
22 everybody over-values their case. You're just
23 over-valuing your case.

24 You create at once a sense of pessimism, and
25 you create a heightened sense of risk -- you raise

1 their risk averse profile, because you're trying to get
2 to done. So, you might exploit it. Now, going into a
3 case at the beginning, you might see one kind of
4 distribution. People change over time. What I'm
5 saying is there's not an equal distribution -- it's not
6 a bell-shaped curve of, you know, optimistic,
7 pessimistic and equal assessment.

8 Q. In your opinion, the lawfulness of agreements
9 between competitors should be determined without regard
10 to whether that agreement arises in the context of
11 settlement, correct?

12 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Objection, this is beyond the
13 scope of the direct examination. It's also beyond the
14 witness' expertise.

15 MS. CREIGHTON: First, Your Honor, I think that
16 we've been having some latitude in cross examination of
17 experts, but specifically, I think that this goes
18 directly to his criticism of Professor Bresnahan's
19 analysis.

20 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: I don't think he's criticized
21 Professor Bresnahan's analysis in terms of his -- in
22 terms of Professor Bresnahan's antitrust analysis, and
23 I don't think he's capable of answering questions like
24 this.

25 JUDGE CHAPPELL: The objection's sustained. If

1 you're going to ask him this, you can't cross examine
2 him, you can't ask leading questions, and you're going
3 to have to lay a foundation.

4 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

5 Q. Mr. O'Shaughnessy, you were not asked to form
6 an opinion about how one would determine whether some
7 component of a settlement was designed to conceal an
8 unlawful arrangement, correct?

9 A. That's correct.

10 Q. You hadn't given that matter enough thought to
11 have an opinion at the time of -- that you prepared
12 your report, correct?

13 A. Well, at the time I prepared my report, all I
14 had looked at was Professor Bresnahan's report. I
15 didn't have any facts that would allow me to answer
16 anywhere -- anything along those lines.

17 Q. And so to the extent that Professor Bresnahan's
18 analysis is intended to determine the lawfulness of
19 agreements that arise in the context of a settlement,
20 you're not expressing an opinion on that one way or the
21 other, correct?

22 A. I believe that's correct as you phrased it.

23 Q. And you have no opinion as to whether the
24 arrangements involved here have any anti-competitive
25 effect, correct?

1 A. That's correct.

2 Q. At the time you prepared your report, Mr.
3 O'Shaughnessy, the only documents that you had reviewed
4 were the Bresnahan report, the complaint, the answer
5 and the two settlement agreements. Isn't that correct?

6 A. I believe that's correct. It's outlined in my
7 report. I don't recall anything else, though.

8 Q. By the time your deposition was taken in this
9 matter, you still hadn't reviewed any of the parties'
10 documents other than the two settlement agreements,
11 correct?

12 A. That's correct, and that remains true today.

13 Q. By the time your deposition was taken, you
14 still hadn't reviewed any deposition transcripts other
15 than to look at the Hoffman transcript and decide you
16 weren't interested in it. Is that correct?

17 A. No, I looked at I think -- I can't remember the
18 order now. It could be that at the time of my
19 deposition, that could be correct, but I have read
20 Professor Bresnahan's deposition, though I did not --
21 no, I read Bazerman's deposition and I read Fliesler's
22 deposition.

23 Q. Those were subsequent to your deposition. Is
24 that right?

25 A. Okay, that could be.

1 Q. You did not rely on specific terms of the
2 settlement agreements in formulating your opinion,
3 correct?

4 A. Correct.

5 Q. In preparing your report, you didn't consider
6 the report, for example, of the fact that ESI -- that
7 the ESI settlement agreement provided for larger
8 payments depending on the timing of ESI's approvable
9 letter, correct?

10 A. That did not -- I did not take that into
11 account in my opinion, no.

12 Q. And you didn't focus or rely on any other
13 specific terms in the settlement agreements in forming
14 your opinions in this case, correct?

15 A. That is correct.

16 MS. CREIGHTON: No further questions, Your
17 Honor.

18 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Anything further?

19 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Yes, just a few questions,
20 Your Honor.

21 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

22 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

23 Q. Mr. O'Shaughnessy, you have seen cases where
24 the -- where one or more of the parties was pessimistic
25 about the outcome?

1 A. Well, I've created pessimism if that's what
2 you're getting at. It -- and that's a -- I think a
3 fairly classic technique that mediators use.

4 Q. Okay. Now, in -- you were asked about
5 providing cash. Have you been involved in matters
6 where net consideration has flowed in both directions?

7 A. Yes.

8 Q. And in any of those matters, was there cash
9 flowing?

10 A. There was cash flowing, there were rights
11 flowing. These can become very intricate,
12 multi-component, a lot of moving parts, as I said
13 earlier, involving cash, involving rights, involving
14 cooperative relationships, which eventually turn to
15 cash.

16 Q. And that can be in return for a license, for
17 example?

18 A. Yes.

19 Q. You were asked some questions about the odds of
20 litigation, and I think you -- the odds of -- the odds
21 of litigation, whether if that was the rule, whether
22 that would be difficult for people to evaluate, and I
23 think you started an answer about it wasn't just the
24 odds of litigation that people had to evaluate but
25 the -- how this -- how to handicap also how to -- you

1 know, how to evaluate the issue of whether it's going
2 to look like net consideration to the FTC.

3 A. Um-hum.

4 Q. And I wanted just to continue and get your full
5 answer on that. How is that going to have an impact on
6 the ability to settle?

7 A. Well, I see these as two related problems.
8 They're related in the sense that the settlement of the
9 dispute is just a prelude to the next proceeding, where
10 now I have to prove a number of things, and it may be I
11 need to prove with precision what my view was in the
12 prior litigation of my likelihood of success, but in
13 addition to that, I now have to present a lot of
14 evidence on the bona fides of the extrinsic
15 value-creating transaction, and the problem I see with
16 this, apart from the problems of proof and the problems
17 of how that proof may be analyzed and reviewed in the
18 cold light of day, in a room like this several years
19 later as opposed to the caldron of negotiation, which
20 after many hours gets pretty hot.

21 Those perceptions will be materially different
22 from the reality, and when you rely on risk aversion to
23 drive parties together to settle their dispute, you
24 have to accept them as they are, and they're going to
25 be risk averse enough that they may say, I don't know

1 how that's going to play out in the second proceeding.
2 I just can't take the chance that I'm going to win here
3 and lose there. So, let's just keep going. No
4 settlement. That's what I predict.

5 Q. And how is that going to affect your ability to
6 mediate disputes?

7 A. Very few disputes would be settled if that were
8 a requirement. It would, as I said, chill them. It
9 would thwart many. It would make some impossible. It
10 would be unwelcome by mediators, I can tell you that.

11 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: No further questions, Your
12 Honor.

13 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Recross?

14 MS. CREIGHTON: Nothing further, Your Honor.

15 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you, sir, you're
16 excused.

17 Let's take our morning break. We're in recess
18 until 11:20.

19 (A brief recess was taken.)

20 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Next witness?

21 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, Schering-Plough
22 calls Robert Willig.

23 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Raise your right hand, please.
24 Whereupon--

25 ROBERT WILLIG

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 a witness, called for examination, having been first
2 duly sworn, was examined and testified as follows:

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you, have a seat.

4 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

5 MR. CURRAN: Your Honor, Mr. Gidley will be
6 responsible for this witness for Upsher-Smith.

7 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you.

8 State your full name for the record, please.

9 THE WITNESS: My name is Robert Willig, W I L L
10 I G.

11 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you.

12 DIRECT EXAMINATION

13 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

14 Q. What is your profession?

15 A. I'm an economist.

16 Q. Where did you complete your studies in
17 economics?

18 A. I got my Ph.D. at Stanford University. I got a
19 Master's Degree also from Stanford University in
20 operations research, and a Bachelor's Degree in
21 mathematics but with some study of economics, as well,
22 at Harvard.

23 Q. And what are your areas of expertise within the
24 field of economics?

25 A. Within economics, my principal area of

1 expertise is the field of industrial organization. I
2 have also done research and studied all of my
3 professional life the field of welfare economics, and I
4 like especially to put the two of those together and
5 study policy in the area of what you might call
6 antitrust economics, and also more broadly in the area
7 of government business relationships.

8 Q. What is industrial organization?

9 A. It's a major field of economics that has to do
10 with the way, naturally enough, industry is organized,
11 that's why it takes on that title, unimaginatively. It
12 has to do with the form that commerce takes in a
13 variety of different societies, a variety of different
14 contexts, with particular attention to what should we
15 be doing as an economic policy community about the way
16 industry is organized for the public good.

17 Q. Is there a relationship between industrial
18 organization and antitrust economics?

19 A. Yes, antitrust economics is that particular
20 focus within industrial organization that focuses on
21 policy in the area of competition, as the rest of the
22 world calls it, and what we call here in the U.S.
23 antitrust.

24 Q. And what is welfare economics?

25 A. Welfare economics is the study of what is good

1 or bad from the point of view of society. We seek to
2 develop philosophical, methodological and practical
3 tools that would help the economic analyst understand
4 whether some change or whether some policy is actually
5 favorable from the point of view of society or not.

6 Q. Where are you employed?

7 A. I'm employed at Princeton University.

8 Q. And what is your position at Princeton?

9 A. Professor of economics and public affairs.

10 Q. And what department are you in there?

11 A. My appointment is joint between the Economics
12 Department and the Woodrow Wilson School of Public and
13 International Affairs.

14 Q. What is the Woodrow Wilson School?

15 A. The Woodrow Wilson school is a department of
16 the university. It's also at the same time a
17 professional school within Princeton University. We
18 educate undergraduates who are at Princeton University
19 as college students. We also have a -- what's to me a
20 very important professional program offering a Master's
21 in public affairs for students who are bound for
22 careers in government and dealing with public policy
23 through nongovernmental organizations. The school also
24 offers its own Ph.D.s, as well.

25 Q. How long have you been at Princeton?

1 A. I've been at Princeton since 1978.

2 Q. What courses do you teach?

3 A. Right now I'm teaching a course in competition
4 policy. It's called Legal and Administrative
5 Regulation of Markets, which I teach to the Master's
6 candidates within the public affairs program in the
7 Woodrow Wilson School. I've taught that same group of
8 students in the fall a course in microeconomics for
9 public policy analysis. I also occasionally teach
10 courses in industrial organization as a matter of
11 theory, as a matter of econometric practice, usually to
12 Ph.D. students in the Economics Department.

13 Q. What additional positions have you held
14 relevant to your work in industrial organization,
15 antitrust economics and welfare economics?

16 A. The first job I had out of graduate school was
17 definitely in that category. I was an economic
18 researcher and then later supervisor in the economics
19 research department of Bell Laboratories.
20 Interestingly, at that time, the issues facing the
21 telephone system were just as importantly regulatory as
22 they were electronic, and Bell Labs built a research
23 capability in that field, and it was exciting to be
24 there in those days.

25 Later on, in 1989-1990, I served in the

1 administration as Deputy Assistant Attorney General for
2 economics within the Antitrust Division of the
3 Department of Justice just down the block.

4 Q. And what was your role as Deputy Assistant
5 Attorney General for economics?

6 A. There were many roles. I'd say the most
7 important was to help in the formulation of policy
8 toward competition for the entire administration. I
9 did wander outside of the building down Pennsylvania
10 Avenue to become involved in the entire
11 administration's thinking about policy toward
12 competition in a variety of domains. I suppose almost
13 equally important was providing whatever advice and
14 guidance I could on the decisions that the Division
15 made with respect to investigations and ultimately
16 prosecution under the antitrust laws.

17 I also was managing personally the group of
18 50-some odd Ph.D. economists and finance experts
19 employed by the Antitrust Division to help with the
20 lawyers and the economists performing the tasks of
21 making judgments about what cases to bring and actually
22 fashioning the cases that the Division decided to
23 bring.

24 Q. What was the objective of the Division's
25 policy?

1 A. Well, from my point of view, and I think most
2 of my colleagues, the objective was to foster
3 competition, to foster social welfare, to foster
4 consumer welfare.

5 Q. What do you mean by "social welfare"?

6 A. This is a long philosophical question, but the
7 bottom line is social welfare is that which we
8 understand to be good policy, good outcomes for society
9 viewed broadly, taking into account consumers, first
10 and foremost, and also taking into account the other
11 interests in the economy.

12 Q. Did you evaluate horizontal restraints of
13 trade?

14 A. Yes, that was certainly part of our portfolio
15 of analyses to do.

16 Q. In your fields of specialization, how many
17 publications have you authored?

18 A. I've written about 75, maybe more, articles,
19 papers, portions of books and books.

20 Q. And can you give us some examples of the books
21 you've authored?

22 A. Yes. My first was called The Welfare Analysis
23 of Policies Affecting Prices and Products, so that went
24 right to the subject matter that we've been discussing.
25 I was a co-author of a book called Contestable

1 Markets and the Theory of Industry Structure. I'm also
2 the co-editor of a two-volume set called The Handbook
3 of Industrial Organization.

4 Q. Can you give us some examples of articles that
5 you've authored?

6 A. Sure. I wrote an article called, "Consumer
7 Surplus without Apology," still my favorite title. I
8 wrote that a long time ago. Another work would be
9 "Free Entry and the Sustainability of Natural
10 Monopoly." A third, which I was just talking about
11 yesterday, is called, "Merger Analysis: Industrial
12 Organization Theory and Guidelines."

13 Q. Where were you talking about it yesterday?

14 A. I was at an antitrust conference at the
15 Conference Board in New York, and the lunchtime panel,
16 sitting next to Bob Pitofsky, talking about the role of
17 concentration in merger analysis, looking back since
18 the original guidelines and looking forward to the next
19 millennium and whether the challenges that are being
20 mounted to the traditional view of concentration are
21 really warranted or whether we have the right framework
22 in place for going forward even though it is a new
23 century.

24 Q. Have you testified as an expert witness in the
25 fields of welfare economics, industrial organization

1 and antitrust economics?

2 A. I have. I've testified before courts, before
3 many administrative agencies, before Congress, before
4 courts in foreign countries, also administrative
5 agencies elsewhere.

6 Q. Have you done any analysis in the field of
7 economics and intellectual property?

8 A. I have. I was asked to write an article
9 reviewing the intellectual property guidelines that
10 were published by the Federal Trade Commission and the
11 Department of Justice jointly some years ago, and I was
12 asked to review them and write a review article about
13 them for a Bar association magazine.

14 I've also done a number of theoretical
15 economics analyses dealing with intellectual property
16 in the economics literature, and I've been involved in
17 a number of consulting matters or applied economic
18 matters where intellectual property was very much at
19 the center of the issue.

20 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, we offer
21 Professor Willig as an expert in industrial
22 organization, antitrust and welfare economics.

23 MR. GIDLEY: No objection.

24 MS. CREIGHTON: No objection.

25 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Motion is granted.

1 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

2 Q. Professor Willig, what was your assignment
3 here?

4 A. I was asked to determine on the basis of
5 economics whether agreements to settle patent disputes
6 that involve a split of the patent are necessarily
7 harmful to social welfare.

8 Q. And you said "a split of the patent." What do
9 you mean by "a split of the patent"?

10 A. The kind of split that I focused on has to do
11 with the split of the remaining time in the life of the
12 patent. In other words, if the patent has ten more
13 years to run and if the agreement to settle the patent
14 dispute would permit entry by the accused infringer of
15 the patent and that entry is sometime in the middle of
16 the remaining patent life, and that would be an example
17 of a split of the patent the way I used the term.

18 Of course, the split could be along other
19 dimensions as well. For example, patents often can be
20 divided into various fields of use or even different
21 geographical areas over which the patent would apply,
22 speaking as an economist not as a lawyer, and I think
23 the basic framework of the analyses that I've done can
24 apply as well to those dimensions of the applicability
25 of the patent as well as to time, but still, in my

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 report, my focus has been on time.

2 Q. Okay. Did we finish your assignments? Do you
3 have any other assignments?

4 A. Yes.

5 Q. Well, were you actually -- were you asked to
6 assess the actual welfare impacts of the particular
7 deals in this case?

8 A. No, I was not actually asked to do a factual
9 analysis of these examples of patent-splitting
10 agreements or of these deals to arrive at a conclusion
11 about them. Instead, I was asked to focus on the issue
12 of methodology, how is it that an economist would
13 advise the policy community or the fact finder about
14 how to decide whether a particular agreement really is
15 in the public interest or whether instead it is
16 anti-competitive, and in that respect, I was asked to
17 review the work in this case by a Professor Bresnahan,
18 who I think from his testimony and his reports has a
19 very definite viewpoint on that issue of methodology,
20 and that's really been the focus of my work, was to
21 test that methodology.

22 Q. Were you asked to review all the record
23 testimony?

24 A. No, I was not.

25 Q. What were you asked to review?

1 A. I focused almost entirely on the testimony of
2 Professor Bresnahan for the reasons that I just
3 mentioned.

4 Q. Okay. Were there any assumptions you were
5 asked to make before analyzing these issues?

6 A. Yes. The first assumption that I was asked to
7 make was that the first leg of Professor Bresnahan's
8 three-leg test is satisfied in this case as a matter of
9 fact, not that I know those facts, but I was asked to
10 assume that the fact finder would agree with Professor
11 Bresnahan's first leg of his test with respect to the
12 existence of monopoly power.

13 Q. You were asked to assume that Schering was a
14 monopolist?

15 A. I was asked to assume that for the purpose of
16 my analysis, to focus on the methodological issue
17 instead.

18 Q. Anything else you were asked to assume?

19 A. Yes. I was also asked to assume the second leg
20 of Professor Bresnahan's test; namely, that that
21 monopoly power that I just mentioned I am assuming is
22 actually threatened by the potential of the possible
23 entry into the marketplace of the litigating entrant
24 who is part of the patent dispute. So, threat to that
25 monopoly power.

1 Q. And what were you asked to assume about net
2 consideration?

3 A. I was asked to assume that the question of
4 whether there is a side deal, an extrinsic deal as part
5 of the agreement to settle the patent dispute, that
6 whether or not that side deal involves net
7 consideration is a matter of contention. I was not
8 asked to assume it was either there or not there, but
9 rather, that it's a real issue in the case.

10 Q. What do you mean by "net consideration"?

11 A. Net consideration would be payment of cash,
12 money or other value beyond the value that is received
13 by the party who was conveying that cash or that value,
14 and that moreover, that cash or value that is conveyed
15 is received by the counter-party.

16 Q. Okay. Let's very briefly have you state your
17 conclusions. What conclusions did you draw?

18 A. Different conclusions about the three different
19 kinds of patent-splitting agreements that I considered
20 using economic analysis. First, from the point of view
21 of a very simple patent-splitting agreement which has
22 no side deal at all, it's just an agreement to split
23 the patent. My conclusion is that agreements of that
24 kind generally raise no significant issues of
25 competitive concern and that the general policy stance

1 ought to be nonintervention in agreements of that kind.

2 Second, with respect to patent-splitting
3 agreements that do entail side agreements or extrinsic
4 agreements, even though they may be linked to the
5 settlement of the patent dispute, my conclusion with
6 respect to them is pretty much the same as the
7 conclusion that I just articulated. Generally those
8 kinds of agreements do not raise systematic issues of
9 concern about competition or about social welfare.

10 However, there is a difference that I think is
11 worth noting, and that is the side agreement that's
12 part of the patent-splitting agreement in its entirety
13 that settles the patent dispute can very well have a
14 special benefit to policy because the ability of the
15 parties to link a side deal to the principal
16 arrangement that settles the patent dispute can, in
17 fact, be socially beneficial. It can help to
18 facilitate the arrival at an agreement that disposes of
19 the patent dispute, and from the point of view of
20 society, that's a good thing.

21 Q. What about your conclusion regarding the
22 patent-splitting arrangement with a side deal with net
23 consideration?

24 A. Settlements of patent disputes with side deals
25 that do -- have been found to convey net value can, in

1 fact, be essential in order for the parties to settle
2 the patent dispute in the first place.

3 Moreover, there are circumstances where when
4 the side agreement that conveys net consideration --
5 when it is necessary to reach an overall agreement,
6 that agreement, supported by the net consideration, can
7 very much be to the benefit of social welfare. It can
8 help consumers as well as being beneficial for the
9 parties.

10 Q. Before I ask you more about your specific
11 conclusions, you've been talking about settlements, and
12 from the point of view of economists, are there -- what
13 are the -- what is the social welfare impact of
14 settlements of intellectual property and other legal
15 disputes that are in litigation?

16 A. Well, there are a few different effects to pay
17 attention to. First and foremost, a settlement of a
18 patent dispute removes the burden of risk that is
19 endemic if the litigation were to go forward from the
20 parties to the dispute, removes the cost of bearing the
21 inevitable risk that attends patent litigation from the
22 parties, and that has a few elements to it, also. But
23 moving on to broader concerns, judicial resources are
24 always scarce, and I think it's a general precept of
25 economics and policy generally that there is social

1 good to conserving scarce judicial resources, and
2 policy that will help to facilitate the ending of
3 disputes, of litigation disputes through settlements,
4 has a social benefit all by itself for that reason
5 alone.

6 Q. You mentioned the cost of bearing risk. Is
7 that the same thing as risk aversion?

8 A. Risk aversion is the term that we use in
9 economics to describe the kinds of preferences that
10 make it costly for a party to bear risk. So, the costs
11 of bearing risk come from risk aversion.

12 Q. What are the costs of bearing risk?

13 A. First and foremost, at the personal level of
14 just individual people, bearing risk is uncomfortable,
15 and people are known to be adverse to risk because it
16 just makes them worry about the downside, and the
17 downside is more negative to them, to us. It's almost
18 a universal thing about people, including me certainly
19 and you, I would warrant, that the downside is actually
20 worse than the upside is good, and so on net, bearing
21 risk that has two sides to it, which is what risk is
22 about, is something that people would seek to avoid,
23 and we label that urge to avoid such risk at a personal
24 level risk aversion.

25 From the point of view of a corporation, risk

1 aversion comes in part from the effects that I was just
2 describing. Corporations are people with managers who
3 are human, shareholders who are human, but at the same
4 time, from the point of view of the corporate interest,
5 there are separate reasons to understand risk aversion,
6 because the more risk that a corporation bears, the
7 higher is its cost of capital. The investment
8 community, Wall Street, understands that risk is
9 something that requires more return to compensate for,
10 and so a firm has a higher cost of capital when it's
11 bearing more risk.

12 Higher cost of capital is a cost of doing
13 business that raises prices, it deters investment,
14 slows down investment, has a number of business impacts
15 that are on the negative side both for the business
16 itself as well as for the economy that surrounds the
17 business.

18 Q. Let's talk about your first conclusion, which
19 was relating to a patent-splitting arrangement without
20 a side deal. Tell us, why did you conclude that such a
21 patent-splitting arrangement without a side deal poses
22 little or no risk of social harm?

23 A. Well, on the benefit side, as we were just
24 describing, the settlement of the patent dispute
25 removes risk from the parties, and so that's a good

1 thing in itself. It also helps to conserve judicial
2 resources. That's a good thing in itself. And on the
3 other side of the ledger, it carries little general
4 risk of impeding competition.

5 Q. And why does it bear little general risk of
6 impeding competition?

7 A. It's not generally likely to create more
8 monopoly than would the alternative process of
9 litigation that the settlement tends to displace.

10 Q. But in splitting the patent life, aren't the
11 litigants dividing the market?

12 A. They are not dividing the market in the sense
13 of creating any more monopoly or any less competition
14 than would be the result in a probabilistic sense under
15 litigation. If the litigation goes the way of the
16 incumbent patent holder, then that patent holder will
17 have the extra monopoly -- again, under the assumption
18 that there is monopoly in the first place -- as a
19 result of winning the patent dispute.

20 Of course, that kind of monopoly that we're
21 talking about is the kind of monopoly that an economist
22 labels as socially appropriate; the law -- I hesitate
23 to speak about the law -- but the law might find
24 lawful, because it's monopoly that flows from the
25 conferral of the property rights inherent in the

1 patent. This is not bad monopoly; this is good
2 monopoly in the first place.

3 Q. Okay, let's go to tab 1 and page 43, and this
4 is complaint counsel's trial brief, and I want to focus
5 on a sentence there that is in the middle paragraph,
6 one sentence from the end, and I'm going to read part
7 of that sentence.

8 A. I'm sorry, what page?

9 Q. Page 43. The sentence starts, "This case," one
10 sentence from the end in the middle paragraph on the
11 page.

12 A. Mr. Schildkraut, I don't have it. Page 43?

13 Q. Page 43.

14 A. Ah, thank you.

15 Q. Okay, let me read it to you. This is from
16 complaint counsel's brief.

17 "This case does not challenge the settlement of
18 patent disputes by an agreement on a date of entry,
19 standing alone."

20 Do you agree with complaint counsel's decision
21 that such conduct should not be challenged?

22 A. I do agree with that.

23 Q. All right. Let's now go to the second
24 conclusion, which was an agreement that is
25 accompanied -- an agreement that is accompanied by a

1 side deal without net consideration, and could you --
2 you say a side deal. Is this a side deal that's for
3 fair value?

4 A. I'm reading the sentence. "This case does not
5 challenge the settlement of patent disputes by an
6 agreement on a date of entry, standing alone, or the
7 payment of fair market value in connection with 'side
8 deals' to such an agreement."

9 Yes, so here the document is speaking about
10 side deals that do not convey net consideration, even
11 though they are linked to the settlement of the
12 underlying patent dispute.

13 Q. Okay. Why did you conclude that a settlement
14 with a patent split that has a side deal without net
15 consideration poses little or no harm of social
16 welfare?

17 A. Well, like splits of patents to settle patent
18 litigation that have no side deals at all, there are
19 real social benefits to the settlement of the patent
20 dispute in and of themselves. The fact that there is a
21 side deal that's linked, given that the side deal has
22 no net consideration entailed in it, means that the
23 side deal raises no additional risks of harm to
24 competition or the creation of more monopoly, and
25 moreover, there's the extra good that the side deal may

1 actually help to facilitate the attainment of a
2 settlement at all, and that has its own social benefit
3 going along with it.

4 Q. Is there any additional general risk of
5 increased monopoly compared to litigation in this sort
6 of patent-splitting arrangement?

7 A. No, there's not.

8 Q. And you've now read the second part of that
9 sentence, we're still on page 43. Do you agree with --
10 basically with complaint counsel's position here, "This
11 case does not challenge the settlement of patent
12 disputes by an agreement on a date of entry, standing
13 alone, or the agreement (sic) of fair market value in
14 connection with 'side deals' to such an agreement"?

15 A. I think you misspoke if it matters, "or the
16 payment of fair market value"? I just had a chance to
17 read along here.

18 Q. Yes, "or the payment of fair market value in
19 connection with 'side deals' to such an agreement."

20 A. I think that's a wise decision by complaint
21 counsel, which here is consistent with good public
22 policy.

23 Q. Let's put up on the screen tab 15, I believe.
24 This is Professor Bresnahan's testimony, and I think
25 we've heard this before, but I wanted to get your

1 opinion about it, so we're starting at -- we're at
2 1021, we're starting at line 7, and I'm going to go to
3 line 21.

4 "QUESTION: Now, let's say life isn't so simple
5 and the parties say we want one global deal tonight and
6 we want to get this settled. Are you telling me that
7 Schering-Plough needs to do some kind of ordinary
8 course of business assessment of the licensing in order
9 to be safe with this valuation calculation, sir?

10 "ANSWER: In order to be safe? I would -- you
11 asked me this question in deposition, and I answered it
12 as I just answered it. If you wanted to be safe, the
13 thing to do would be break the linkage."

14 Let me stop right there and ask you, if
15 Professor Bresnahan is correct that litigants could
16 only be safe by negotiating patent settlements without
17 a side deal, what would be the impact on these sort of
18 deals?

19 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor,
20 misstates the witness' testimony.

21 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, let me rephrase the
22 question.

23 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay.

24 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

25 Q. If Professor Bresnahan is correct in what he

1 stated here, how would that -- how would that -- what
2 would the impact be of that on social welfare?

3 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor. I think
4 that the question -- the linkage of due diligence as a
5 predicate to entering into a settlement is beyond the
6 scope of what Dr. Willig has opined on in his report.

7 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: No, Dr. Willig opined in his
8 report on exactly I think this issue, which is what
9 we're talking about now, which is whether
10 patent-splitting agreements are a good thing if they
11 have side deals. So, now we're asking -- now what
12 we're asking Dr. Willig is if the patent-splitting
13 agreement -- what we're asking him is what is the
14 welfare impact if you're not -- if you can't be safe
15 doing such agreements?

16 MS. CREIGHTON: Well, respectfully, I think the
17 question asked whether or not there was some concern
18 about whether you could enter into a deal tonight
19 without doing any due diligence and knowing anything
20 about the properties that were being exchanged, and I
21 think the answer was that -- as he stated, but that's a
22 quite different thing from the question of whether or
23 not you can enter into side deals.

24 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, let me -- rather than
25 argue this, let me rephrase the question.

1 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

2 Q. Professor Willig, if you can't be safe doing
3 side deals without net consideration in trying to
4 settle a patent dispute, what kind of social welfare
5 impact would that have?

6 A. I think there would be a negative impact on
7 social welfare if the opportunity to link side deals to
8 agreements that would settle the principal patent
9 dispute were somehow chilled, suppressed, made less
10 likely, made more dangerous as a result of a
11 competition policy that were put into effect by an
12 agency such as this one.

13 Q. What impact would that have on people's degree
14 of certainty?

15 A. If the parties to an underlying patent dispute
16 who were attempting to reach a settlement of that
17 dispute found themselves in a position where it were
18 dangerous for them to link a side deal, whether or not
19 they think it involved net consideration, because of
20 legal problems that they feel might afflict them if
21 they took that step, it would make it harder for them
22 to reach a settlement of the underlying litigation, and
23 that means that they, as enterprises, would wind up
24 bearing more risk.

25 It means that our judicial system would wind up

1 with more litigation that could otherwise be adverted
2 if there were different policy about side deals with or
3 without net consideration.

4 Q. Let's go now into your next conclusion. That
5 relates to patent-splitting agreements that are
6 accompanied by a side deal with the payment of net
7 consideration to the patent holder. What is your
8 conclusion relating to such -- to such arrangements?

9 A. My conclusion is that it would be a real
10 mistake to prohibit them, because side deals linked to
11 settlements of patent disputes where there is net
12 consideration, where there's a finding of such net
13 consideration, even where that is clear, can very well
14 be essential in order for the parties to be able to
15 settle their underlying dispute at all.

16 Moreover, my analysis shows that some of the
17 settlements that can be attained through linking a side
18 deal with net consideration to the settlement of the
19 patent dispute can, in fact, be socially desirable for
20 all concerned, both the parties and assuredly consumers
21 as well.

22 Q. Okay. What is your understanding about the
23 nature of Professor Bresnahan's concern about such
24 arrangements?

25 A. Professor Bresnahan reaches the opposite

1 conclusion. He seems to assert -- he does assert that
2 the mere finding of the payment of net consideration in
3 a side deal that is linked means necessarily that
4 consumers are harmed by the entire settlement.

5 Q. Okay. And how does he -- how does he
6 determine -- why does he determine that the outcome of
7 that settlement is worse than the outcome of
8 litigation?

9 A. The starting place for his analysis is his view
10 that the reservation time for the entry of the
11 litigating entrant as viewed by the incumbent is right
12 at the mean time of entry under litigation. That's
13 really his starting place. If I had a demonstrative,
14 perhaps I could point to it.

15 Q. We will go into that fairly soon.

16 Are you both comparing the same thing in terms
17 of looking at the social welfare impact? And I mean by
18 that, are you comparing the date of entry under
19 settlement with the likely date of entry under
20 litigation?

21 A. Yes, Professor Bresnahan is reaching his
22 conclusion on the basis of a comparison between the
23 entry date under the settlement as compared to the mean
24 probable entry date under litigation.

25 Q. What do you mean by "mean probable entry date"?

1 A. Well, under litigation, there is no sure thing.
2 There's the possibility of a very early entry date if
3 it is the -- excuse me, the litigating entrant who
4 prevails, who were to prevail in the patent dispute,
5 and that has some likelihood attached to it. And on
6 the other hand, if the incumbent patent holder were to
7 prevail, then the entry date would be delayed until the
8 end of the patent life, and that has some probability
9 attached to it.

10 When I say the mean probable entry date under
11 litigation, what I'm talking about is the average, the
12 weighted average of those two dates, taking into
13 account those probabilities, which I like to talk about
14 under the rubric of the underlying merits of the patent
15 dispute, which in my model comes down to the comparison
16 of these probabilities to each other.

17 Q. Now, if you're comparing those two things and
18 Professor Bresnahan's comparing those two things, where
19 do you differ with Professor Bresnahan?

20 A. Well, let me say first of all that while our
21 basic approach in this regard is very much in sync with
22 each other, in my own work I try to focus on the
23 consumer perspective, on the mean probable date of
24 entry under litigation, and there are some of my
25 analyses under which that's actually significantly

1 different than simply the probabilistic -- the
2 statistical version of that same mean. And Professor
3 Bresnahan doesn't incorporate those kinds of factors in
4 his analysis, so there we use this construct in
5 somewhat different fashions.

6 Q. And I think you were saying that net payments
7 do not always have an adverse social welfare effect.
8 Is that right?

9 A. That is right.

10 Q. Okay. Then why is Professor Bresnahan wrong in
11 thinking that net payments always have such an effect?

12 A. You say why is he wrong or is he wrong?

13 Q. Is he wrong?

14 A. He is wrong, yes.

15 Q. And why is he wrong?

16 A. He's wrong because his formulation, his
17 analysis, leaves out a number of elements of the
18 context which I think are relevant or even endemic to
19 situations of this kind, and people who do economic
20 analysis always have to leave something out. We're
21 just doing models. But in this instance, the elements
22 that Professor Bresnahan chose to omit from his
23 analysis actually swing the conclusions rather
24 drastically.

25 Q. You mentioned earlier a reservation date. What

1 is a reservation date?

2 A. I mean by that term -- the reservation date for
3 the patent-holding incumbent is the earliest date at
4 which the incumbent would be willing to come to an
5 agreement for the entry of the litigating entrant.

6 Q. Okay, I'm going to ask you to try to illustrate
7 this using a chart.

8 Your Honor, may the witness go to the easel?

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, he may.

10 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

11 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

12 Q. Okay, we're looking at tab 17. This is SPX
13 2332, demonstrative for identification, and looking for
14 the Cash-Strapped Generic.

15 A. Who's doing my blocking?

16 Well, this is a picture that is one of a
17 sequence that I hope to have the opportunity to use,
18 and so it's worthwhile for me to explain some of the
19 basic elements of the demonstrative.

20 Q. Why don't we start with the yellow line on the
21 demonstrative. What is that?

22 A. Let's start with the yellow line on the
23 demonstrative. This is the time line. The time line
24 begins at the time when settlement negotiations are
25 taking place. This is the beginning of the frame of

1 time that's being pictured here. The end point of the
2 yellow line is the time that corresponds to the end of
3 the patent life. So, this is a portrayal of the time
4 line that holds the action for the analysis.

5 Q. I think, Professor Willig, I can barely read it
6 from there even though we blew this up. Maybe we can
7 move this forward a little. That may be a little more
8 helpful.

9 Okay, to illustrate the point you want to
10 illustrate, what else do we need to identify on this
11 demonstrative?

12 A. This line here signifies the time that is the
13 probable date of entry under litigation. It's that
14 statistical average from the consumer's perspective
15 that I was just explaining. It's literally the mean of
16 the time when the entrant would be permitted and
17 actually be able to function in the market were the
18 entrant to prevail in the patent litigation, mixed in,
19 in the sense of an average, with the time when the
20 entrant would be able to come in were it the case that
21 the patent-holding incumbent were to prevail in the
22 patent litigation.

23 So, it's sometime in the middle, and how far it
24 is as between the two end points of the time line
25 depends upon the merits of the underlying patent

1 litigation. Here, it's drawn somewhere in the middle,
2 reflecting something like a 50/50 or a 60/40
3 probability of the patent suit going one way or the
4 other. So, it's a marker.

5 Q. What about the "Consumers Prefer These
6 Settlements to Litigation," what does that box mean?

7 A. Well, the box just holds the logo. The arrow
8 actually displays the different times when entry might
9 be allowed under various possible settlements, and the
10 arrow shows the set of those times that consumers would
11 prefer to litigation. Notice that the arrow runs up to
12 the mean probable date of entry under litigation,
13 because that's the mean, the average time of entry,
14 that consumers would have to their benefit under
15 litigation, so any earlier time would be preferable for
16 consumers in this particular formulation.

17 By the way, that won't always be the case in
18 other forms of this analysis, but for this one, this is
19 indeed the case.

20 Q. What about the I guess pink box on the top, do
21 we need that to illustrate the point?

22 A. Well, the pink box illustrates the settlement
23 entry dates that the incumbent will be willing to
24 settle for, again, as against the backdrop of
25 litigation. As drawn here, the arrow labeled with the

1 pink box shows all of those times that the incumbent
2 would prefer or be indifferent to as compared to
3 litigation, but this is not the right location of the
4 arrow under Professor Bresnahan's formulation.

5 Q. Well, first, why does the arrow go past the
6 mean probable date of entry under litigation?

7 A. In this display, as the box tries to remind us,
8 because of risk aversion or other litigation costs that
9 are experienced by the incumbent, were litigation to go
10 forward, the incumbent is willing to give up some time
11 relative to the mean probable date of entry under
12 litigation in order to have a settlement. A settlement
13 conveys benefits to the incumbent, avoiding the risk
14 and avoiding other litigation costs, and that's why in
15 this display the arrow moves to the left of the mean
16 probable date.

17 Q. Okay. Now, you began to mention how Professor
18 Bresnahan would view this.

19 A. Right --

20 Q. Can you tell us --

21 A. -- and in Professor Bresnahan's analysis, this
22 line, which depicts the acceptable settlement entry
23 dates for the incumbent, never goes to the left of the
24 mean probable date -- at the risk of --

25 Q. We've got others. Go ahead.

1 A. Okay. Instead, for Professor Bresnahan, the
2 arrow ends right there, so this part does not apply,
3 and for his analysis, at least the way he reaches his
4 conclusion, it's always the case that the incumbent's
5 set of acceptable entry dates ends right at the mean
6 probable date.

7 Q. And you mentioned the word "reservation date."
8 What does this analysis have to do with the reservation
9 date?

10 A. The reservation date is just I think a helpful
11 term that applies to for the incumbent the left-hand
12 side of the arrow, what is that date. That's the
13 earliest date at which the incumbent will accept entry
14 in the context of a settlement.

15 Likewise, just to get it off my chest, we can
16 talk about the reservation date for the generic, the
17 litigating entrant, as well, and from the point of view
18 of the litigating entrant, the reservation date is the
19 right-hand side of that arrow, the arrow that applies
20 to the entrant.

21 Q. Now, is it the risk aversion that's affecting
22 the entry date -- excuse me, the reservation date?

23 A. For the incumbent, it's the combination of
24 litigation costs and risk aversion.

25 Q. Okay.

1 A. Either of those will pull it to the left.

2 Q. Why don't you go back to your seat, and I'm
3 going to ask you some more questions on risk aversion.

4 Let's put up tab 2 on the screen. This is some
5 testimony from Professor Bresnahan at 1150 of the
6 transcript, and we're going to be looking at line 9
7 through line 18.

8 A. Tab 2?

9 Q. Tab 2, yes, line 9 through line 18. Do you see
10 it there?

11 A. Yes.

12 Q. Okay, let me read it then.

13 "QUESTION: Okay. Do you want to give us the
14 other definition while we're at it?

15 "ANSWER: Sure. A person is risk averse if
16 they would turn down a fair bet against something that
17 had the same expected pay-off. That's what I mean by a
18 'fair bet.'

19 "QUESTION: And to finish that thought, would a
20 risk averse person take a more certain amount of money
21 that was lower than the value of the fair bet?

22 "ANSWER: Yes."

23 Do you agree with that definition of risk
24 aversion?

25 A. That does agree with my definition. There's

1 obviously different ways to articulate it, but I think
2 that way is accurate.

3 Q. Let me ask you about insurance policies. Is
4 insurance policies a fair bet?

5 A. It depends upon how well you shop for your
6 insurance policy. We like to think that in a
7 competitive insurance market that the proffer of the
8 policy is a fair bet in the sense that you're not
9 charged any more for the policy than is the expected
10 value of the risk actually worth to the company.

11 Q. And how does -- how does -- what is the -- how
12 does the insurance policy affect the bearing of risk?

13 A. Right, so I buy -- economic agents buy
14 insurance policies so as to offload the risk of the
15 underlying loss from their own shoulders and move it
16 over to the insurance company. So, if, God forbid, my
17 car should blow up and I lose the \$20,000 value of the
18 car, if the insurance agent is doing her job, then I'd
19 call her up and say, my car blew up, give me a new car
20 tomorrow, or \$20,000 would be just fine, thank you, and
21 hopefully the insurance company will make good its
22 promise.

23 So, therefore, even without my car actually
24 blowing up, the risk that my car would blow up is not
25 on my shoulders. It has been taken off my shoulders by

1 the insurance company.

2 Q. Are you familiar with the term "risk premium"?

3 A. Yeah.

4 Q. Can you define that for us?

5 A. Yes, the risk premium is the most I would be
6 willing to pay to offload the risk. So, it's not the
7 same as the insurance premium, because that's what the
8 insurance company is requiring that I pay in order to
9 offload the risk onto them, but the risk premium is the
10 value to me of getting out from under the risk.

11 Q. Okay, let's talk some more about risk aversion.

12 How does risk aversion affect the investment
13 that managers are willing to make for their companies?

14 A. A manager who is risk averse or whose company
15 is risk averse tries to fashion investment decisions in
16 a way that takes cognizance of the risk and tries to
17 avoid unnecessary risks, trading off risk and return.
18 The manager will understand that an investment that has
19 a riskier posture than some other investment is for
20 that reason alone less valuable, and so it needs a
21 higher expected return, putting the risk aside, in
22 order to compensate for the additional risk.

23 Q. Can risk aversion result in less investment?

24 A. Risk aversion certainly does result in less
25 investment, because the aversion to risk itself causes

1 the firm to step away from investments that it might
2 otherwise make, but in the corporate environment, the
3 most direct interaction, at least at some level of
4 perspective, is the cost of capital to the corporation,
5 and the riskier is the posture of the corporate
6 holdings, the higher is the cost of capital, and if the
7 cost of capital is higher, then investment becomes less
8 desirable.

9 At the same time, even apart from the cost of
10 capital, if the outcomes in the applicable portion of
11 the company's business are uncertain, then that's an
12 extra reason for the company, first of all, to wait, to
13 delay investment until some of the uncertainty clears,
14 and second of all, the company that doesn't entirely
15 wait -- and it's not always the right thing to do to
16 wait until all uncertainty clears, uncertainty never
17 fully goes away -- mistakes are going to be made as a
18 result of the risk, because you don't correctly always
19 foresee the future.

20 The riskier the future is, the more likely you
21 are to misjudge and therefore make the wrong investment
22 decision today as a result of that risk.

23 Q. How common is risk aversion?

24 A. I think risk aversion is generally prevalent
25 both among individuals and among corporate institutions

1 in their decision making.

2 Q. Let's turn to tab 4, put some passages up on
3 the screen. The first one is from Paul Samuelson and
4 William Nordhaus. Who is Paul Samuelson?

5 A. Paul Samuelson in some ways is one of the
6 originators of modern economics. He's one of the first
7 Nobel Laureates in the field, and, of course, his Econ
8 1 textbook was almost universally read by 30 years of
9 econ students.

10 Q. Let me read it to you.

11 "People are generally risk averse, preferring a
12 sure thing to uncertain levels of consumption; people
13 prefer outcomes with less uncertainty and the same
14 average values. For this reason, activities that
15 reduce the uncertainties of consumption lead to
16 improvements in economic welfare."

17 Do you agree with that?

18 A. Yes, I do.

19 Q. And how do they lead to improvements in
20 economic welfare?

21 A. For all the reasons that we've been talking
22 about. This is -- reducing uncertainties means
23 reducing risk, and that has all the beneficial elements
24 that we've been discussing.

25 Q. Okay, now I'd like you to turn to tab 3, and

1 how common is risk aversion within companies?

2 A. I think the general presumption is that there
3 is risk aversion underlying the decision-making of most
4 companies.

5 Q. Okay, let's look at the second quote on the
6 page from Frederick Scherer. Who is Frederick Scherer?

7 A. Ah, Frederick Scherer, he's a very well-known
8 industrial organization economist who in some sense is
9 also one of the founders of the modern field of
10 industrial organization. His textbook also was read by
11 many generations of scholars in industrial organization
12 to this day. He was a chief economist at the Federal
13 Trade Commission for a while, well-known consultant,
14 very long list of important articles in the field.

15 Q. Okay, let me read you his quote.

16 "Only the decision maker who attaches no
17 significance whatsoever to avoiding risk will always
18 choose alternatives with the highest best-guess
19 payoffs. And such managers, empirical studies suggest,
20 are rare."

21 Do you agree with Professor Scherer?

22 A. I think that's right in my judgment.

23 Q. How does one go about determining whether a
24 company is risk averse?

25 A. Well, I think first and foremost, it's actually

1 a fair presumption that companies tend to be risk
2 averse in the sense of risk aversion being one way to
3 explain, an economist's way to articulate, the
4 sensitivity to risk that does underlie a great deal of
5 corporate decision-making.

6 I should say in that context that risk aversion
7 is a phrase that lots of economists like to use to
8 describe this phenomenon, but it's by no means a
9 universal phrase in the business community. I think if
10 I asked a typical businessperson, are you risk averse,
11 is your company risk averse, it's hard to know how they
12 would respond to that, but if you look at corporate
13 decision-making, it's commonplace to see that corporate
14 decision-making does take risk into account in the very
15 way that risk aversion would help to explain through
16 the economic perspective.

17 Q. What about individual managers of companies,
18 are they also risk averse?

19 A. Individual managers are quite likely to be risk
20 averse in the sense that they are humans, and humans
21 tend to be risk averse about their own personal
22 finances, their own personal economy.

23 Within the corporate setting, individual
24 managers will naturally, where they have discretion
25 over decision-making, will be in some ways making

1 decisions that reflect their own judgment, their own
2 taste, and their own personal risk aversion as well to
3 the extent that the decisions they make wind up
4 influencing their own personal prosperity.

5 That would be the case where they're
6 compensated by the corporation in terms that reflect
7 the outcomes of the decisions they make on their
8 portion of the business, both in the short run and the
9 long run. I'm thinking about your annual bonus if
10 you're an executive, but perhaps even more importantly,
11 the entire course of your career you might feel as a
12 manager is affected by how people in your hierarchy
13 judge what your results have been as a manager over the
14 part of the business where you have managerial
15 authority and discretion.

16 Q. Does economic theory tell us something about
17 how risk is likely to affect a patent holder or a
18 branded incumbent's negotiations in settling patent
19 litigation?

20 A. Well, as we were discussing at the
21 demonstrative, the first and foremost way that you can
22 see that in the demonstrative is that the prevalence of
23 risk aversion on the part of the incumbent patent
24 holder tends to move the reservation date to the early
25 side of the mean probable date of entry under

1 litigation. I think this is probably particularly
2 salient for the incumbent, for the patent holder, in
3 this setting, because it's understood in economics that
4 the risk premium, the value of offloading risk, the
5 pressure behind the risk and the need to try to
6 mitigate it as best as possible, all of these are more
7 powerful forces the larger is the amount of money or
8 value that is at stake for the corporation.

9 And in the setting of the kinds of patent
10 disputes that I'm analyzing here, it's the incumbent
11 who has the greatest amount of profit or value at
12 stake, because certainly under the Bresnahan assumption
13 number one where there's a monopoly, there's monopoly
14 profit at stake, whereas for the litigating entrant,
15 what that firm has to gain or lose is not so-called
16 assumed monopoly profit but instead the profit flow
17 that would come from a number two or a number three
18 competitor in the market, and that's necessarily and
19 understood to be a smaller amount of money at stake
20 than that which is at stake and therefore at risk on
21 the part of the incumbent. So, more risk aversion
22 because there's more money at stake.

23 Q. Okay, let's -- I want to turn to tab 5. This
24 is the rebuttal expert report of Professor Timothy
25 Bresnahan. We are going to be looking at page 1, and

1 the paragraph I want to look at is the last paragraph
2 on the page, and the -- I'm going to start with the
3 second sentence in that paragraph.

4 Have you found that, Professor Willig?

5 A. Yes, thank you.

6 Q. "A risk averse patent holder is willing to
7 settle for an entry date that is earlier than the
8 expected entry date under litigation in order to gain
9 certainty. Risk aversion makes settlement more likely,
10 but does not explain why the form of the settlement
11 should involve a reverse payment. To develop a theory
12 that justifies a reverse payment, Professor Willig must
13 combine risk aversion with an explanation for why the
14 entrant is unwilling to accept the earliest entry date
15 that a risk averse patent holder would be willing to
16 offer."

17 What I'd like you to do is -- let's -- what
18 we're going to do is we're going to focus on the first
19 few sentences there. So, let me just read those.

20 "A risk averse patent holder is willing to
21 settle for an entry date that is earlier than the
22 expected entry date under litigation in order to gain
23 certainty. Risk aversion makes settlement more
24 likely." Let's just stop there.

25 Now I want you to look at a second quote, and

1 then I am going to ask you questions about both of
2 those. So, let's go to tab 4, this is SPX 2295, and
3 we're looking now at the quote from Kenneth Arrow.

4 Who is Kenneth Arrow?

5 A. Kenneth Arrow is another truly great modern
6 economist who, like Paul Samuelson, was one of the
7 founders of modern economics, early Nobel Laureate.
8 He's actually still an active researcher, lecturer,
9 holds a professorship at Stanford right now.

10 Q. Let me read this quote.

11 "From the time of Bernoulli on, it has been
12 common to argue that (a) individuals tend to display
13 aversion to the taking of risks, and (b) that risk
14 aversion in turn is an explanation for many observed
15 phenomena in the economic world."

16 Now, Professor, I would like you to go back to
17 your demonstrative that we have up there, this was at
18 tab 17, and I'd like you to see if you can just explain
19 to us, using the demonstrative, Professor Bresnahan's
20 point where he says, "A risk averse patent holder is
21 willing to settle for an entry date that is earlier
22 than the expected entry date under litigation in order
23 to gain certainty."

24 A. His point in that sentence is that the
25 applicable arrow here is not the one that I scratched

1 out but instead the one that I had drawn originally,
2 which moves to the left of the mean probable date of
3 entry under litigation. In that sentence, Professor
4 Bresnahan is saying that I had it right the first time
5 instead of after I scratched it out, and the reason I
6 scratched it out is not because Professor Bresnahan
7 actually wrote that sentence but because the analysis
8 that Professor Bresnahan utilizes to reach his
9 conclusion that's important to this case, the so-called
10 Bresnahan rule, that conclusion is based on an arrow
11 that necessarily stops here, although in this picture
12 and in that quotation by Professor Bresnahan, the arrow
13 would move to the left of that mean probable date as
14 originally pictured.

15 Q. Is Professor Bresnahan ignoring what he said in
16 that sentence when he draws his -- when he comes to his
17 reservation date?

18 A. Yes.

19 Q. Okay. How is -- how does the Arrow quote
20 figure into this analysis?

21 A. The good Professor Arrow is saying that the
22 arrow would generally be moving to the left of the mean
23 probable date. It says risk aversion is a general
24 phenomenon. As a result, when one draws a picture like
25 this, the way accurately to draw it, it would be to

1 have the arrow extend to the left of the mean probable
2 date of entry.

3 Moreover, Professor Arrow is saying that one
4 can only understand a great deal of important economic
5 phenomena through the lens of allowing there to be risk
6 aversion. This is not just a theoretical nicety in the
7 view of Professor Arrow; rather, an essential part of
8 our ability to understand real behavior, business
9 behavior, as well as policy under circumstances where
10 risk is important.

11 Q. Now, if you would have your seat again for just
12 a minute, I'd like to now go to the second part of that
13 statement in tab 5 at page 1, which says, "To develop a
14 theory that justifies a reverse payment, Professor
15 Willig must combine risk aversion with an explanation
16 for why the entrant is unwilling to accept the earliest
17 entry date that a risk averse patent holder would be
18 willing to offer."

19 Do you see that sentence?

20 A. I'm just getting to it now, actually. Yes.

21 Q. Okay. Are there reasons that an entrant would
22 not accept the earliest date that a risk averse patent
23 holder is willing to offer?

24 A. Yes, I think there are perhaps many and
25 certainly several reasons why that might be the case.

1 Q. Okay. Can you give me -- can you give me an
2 example of one?

3 A. One example would bring us to the title of this
4 demonstrative, namely, the Cash-Strapped Generic.

5 Q. Okay. Professor, would you go back to our
6 board again? I know I'm treating you like a yo-yo
7 here.

8 A. I'm glad you said that, Counsel.

9 Q. Can you show us -- can you show us now -- we're
10 talking about tab 17 again, which is the Cash-Strapped
11 Generic, and that is SPX 2332. Can you show us your
12 understanding of the impact of net consideration in
13 Professor Bresnahan's model?

14 A. Yes. Suppose with Professor Bresnahan that we
15 start with the concept that the incumbent will not
16 accept any settlements that are to the left of the mean
17 probable date, and that would flow from Professor
18 Bresnahan's analysis as pictured here under the
19 circumstances that the incumbent has no risk aversion,
20 no other substantial litigation costs, and some of the
21 other cases that I handle and will have the chance to I
22 hope describe later on don't apply as well. So, for
23 Professor Bresnahan, the starting place, the
24 reservation date is always the main probable date of
25 entry under litigation.

1 Then Professor Bresnahan goes on to say that if
2 net consideration were paid out by the incumbent, then
3 that payment must move the reservation date to the
4 later side, that the fact, if there were to be a
5 finding, the fact of that payment must be compensated
6 for the incumbent by a movement of the reservation date
7 out to the right.

8 And here's where Professor Bresnahan's logical
9 conclusion, based on his narrow and I think unreliable
10 foundations, this is where his conclusion follows,
11 because as you can see from the picture, if you have to
12 start at the mean probable date of entry as the
13 location of the reservation date, and if net
14 consideration is paid which must move the line, the
15 reservation line, out to the right, then Professor
16 Bresnahan notices that given those two ifs, the
17 conclusion is that any settlement that the incumbent
18 will accept must be to the right of the mean probable
19 date of entry and therefore later than the date that
20 signifies the break-even point for consumers relative
21 to litigation. So, that's why Professor Bresnahan says
22 if there is net consideration paid, then the result
23 must be a bad thing for consumers.

24 Q. Okay, why don't we look at now the arrow that
25 was originally drawn, "With risk aversion or other

1 litigation costs, the incumbent will accept these
2 settlements."

3 What happens if you have net consideration
4 under those circumstances?

5 A. So, if the reservation date for the incumbent
6 is not the mean probable date, but rather, a date on
7 the early side of the mean probable date, because of
8 risk aversion, other litigation costs or other forces,
9 then if net consideration were paid, that would,
10 indeed, move the reservation date to the right, as
11 Professor Bresnahan noted, but now the result of that
12 movement to the right can still be on the earlier side
13 of the mean probable date of entry, thereby leading to
14 a settlement with an entry date that is positively
15 favorable for consumers relative to the mean probable
16 date of entry.

17 Q. Does that have to be the outcome?

18 A. It doesn't have to be the outcome, but the
19 opportunity to use a side deal with net consideration
20 under these circumstances opens up the opportunity for
21 settlements that might otherwise be impossible that are
22 favorable, positively favorable, for consumers.

23 Q. With net consideration in this model, you said
24 it's not possible. Does that mean it is possible that
25 with net consideration and risk aversion you could

1 still have an anti-competitive settlement?

2 A. Yes, it could.

3 Q. Why don't you take your seat again for a
4 minute.

5 So, let's go back to tab 5 again at 1 where
6 Professor Bresnahan says, "A risk averse patent holder
7 is willing to settle for an entry date that is earlier
8 than the expected entry date under litigation in order
9 to gain certainty."

10 Given that quote, how can Professor Bresnahan
11 possibly conclude that net consideration always takes
12 you past a mean probable entry date?

13 A. He could only reach that conclusion by
14 employing an analysis that absolutely neglects his own
15 assertion here.

16 Q. Okay. So far we have considered Professor
17 Bresnahan's comparison between entry date under
18 settlement versus the entry date under litigation. Are
19 there other possible comparisons an economist might
20 want to make?

21 A. Yes, I think there might be.

22 Q. And what are those?

23 A. Well, we've been talking here about comparing
24 the entry date under the patent settlement with the
25 mean probable date under litigation, but it's at least

1 possible to think about comparing the date of entry
2 under the settlement that is being analyzed with the
3 entry date under some other settlement that might be
4 conceived of as a real practical alternative.

5 Q. And how would an economist want to go about
6 looking at that?

7 A. Well, an economist would perhaps worry that
8 there might be such an alternative, and that would
9 provide a standard of comparison that would suggest the
10 actual entry date under the real settlement is later
11 than it would otherwise necessarily have to be, but the
12 way to go about that is through direct evidence.

13 If I were advising an administrative agency in
14 this respect, I would certainly advise that this would
15 be the kind of analysis that would require a direct
16 inquiry, direct evidence of such an actual practical
17 alternative other settlement that involved earlier
18 entry and therefore were preferable for consumers.

19 Q. Okay, let's look at tab 16. This is another
20 part of Professor Bresnahan's testimony, and here we're
21 looking at line 13 at 1008, and I am going to go to
22 line 3 of the next page, and let me read that for you.

23 "QUESTION: Now, I'm listening to your
24 testimony, but I'm not sure I'm clear. You don't care
25 for the June 17th, 1997 settlement agreement. You

1 believe it's anti-competitive, correct?

2 "ANSWER: That's correct.

3 "QUESTION: What is the scenario that you think
4 should have occurred in this case?

5 "ANSWER: The -- either settlement with -- just
6 for time or litigation. I don't have a view between
7 those two, in particular because I don't know whether
8 the -- whether the parties could have settled the
9 lawsuit without a payment.

10 "QUESTION: As you're sitting here today, you
11 don't know whether there was another settlement the
12 parties could have agreed to. Isn't that correct?

13 "ANSWER: Right, that's correct."

14 So, if there's no evidence of -- no direct
15 evidence of another settlement, are we back to the
16 original comparison we were talking about, litigation
17 outcomes versus settlement?

18 A. That's the only other possible comparison that
19 I'm aware of and that I can imagine.

20 Q. Okay. So far, you've said that net
21 consideration may not postpone entry compared to
22 litigation. Are there circumstances where net
23 consideration may be necessary for the parties to
24 obtain any settlement at all?

25 A. Yes, I've analyzed a number of such situations.

1 Q. And is one of them the cash-strapped situation
2 we've talked about here?

3 A. Yes, it is.

4 Q. Okay, why don't we go back up there, and since
5 you've drawn on that one, maybe -- I think there's
6 another board that we can put up.

7 Your Honor, with your indulgence, I'll go help
8 the Professor put that board up.

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, you may.

10 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Thank you.

11 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

12 Q. I think we have explained part of this
13 demonstrative so far, and we are still at tab 17, SPX
14 2332. Can you explain the additional features of this
15 demonstrative which are necessary to draw your
16 conclusions?

17 A. Yes, well, note first we're back to the arrow
18 for the incumbent that reflects risk aversion or other
19 litigation costs. I also should mention that the
20 reservation times for the incumbent and the generic are
21 here, as they're pictured, linked to them having
22 accurate assessments of the strength of the underlying
23 patent litigation. They agree with each other, and
24 they agree with the outside observer about those
25 probabilities.

1 There's still risk. There's still a
2 probability, but they agree on those probabilities.
3 They are neither optimistic nor pessimistic. They're
4 realistic about the underlying risk.

5 The added element is that the generic here is
6 what I colorfully call cash-strapped, which is just
7 meant to connote the idea that the generic has a need
8 for cash on the earlier side, for whatever reason, but
9 being cash-strapped would certainly seem to be one kind
10 of rationale.

11 Of course, all economic actors, as economists
12 see it, want more money and want more money earlier,
13 earlier is better, but that's not the situation that
14 this demonstrative pictures; rather pictures the case
15 that the generic has a special need to have cash flow
16 positive on the early side for its own reasons, either
17 to undergird its ability to do business or because of
18 its investors, for whatever reason, it just needs
19 money, and it needs money earlier.

20 Under those conditions, the reservation time
21 for the generic is necessarily way earlier than it
22 would otherwise be if it weren't cash-strapped. If it
23 weren't cash-strapped, it would be willing to wait
24 until the mean probable date or as reflected by its
25 risk aversion or other considerations, but here,

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 because of its need for early cash, it just can't or
2 it's not willing to wait for some measure of positive
3 cash flow.

4 The way I explain this to myself -- well, the
5 mathematics explains it, but my underlying explanation
6 to myself is that if the generic were to go to
7 litigation, that would give the generic some chance of
8 an early win with early entry which would provide it
9 with a cash flow from its ability to be in the market
10 on the early side if it were to win.

11 Of course, if it were to lose, it doesn't get
12 that early cash flow, but then perhaps there's nothing
13 much at stake for it anyway if it doesn't find an
14 alternative source of cash so as to alleviate its need.
15 That makes litigation relatively favorable for the
16 generic, because it gives it a road to early cash, and
17 therefore, the only kinds of settlements that it's
18 willing to accept vis-a-vis the backdrop of that
19 litigation is a settlement that will provide it with an
20 equivalent or an amount of early cash flow that will
21 solve its business problem.

22 Q. So, do we have a deal?

23 A. Well, we have a real problem here. There's a
24 gap. There's no deal as pictured here, and the way to
25 see it on the picture is literally the gap between the

1 ends of the arrows that picture the reservation times
2 for the incumbent and the litigating generic entrant.
3 When their arrows don't reach each other or overlap,
4 then there's a gap that means they cannot come to terms
5 on any date for entry, and so without something in
6 addition, like net consideration, they can't possibly
7 reach an agreement to their underlying patent dispute.

8 Q. Can they reach an agreement with net
9 consideration?

10 A. What this picture shows is that if they are
11 permitted by their own decision-making and by the legal
12 environment to do a side deal that is linked to the
13 original dispute and where that side deal does provide
14 a flow of net consideration, net consideration provides
15 the avenue for the conveyance of cash early to the
16 generic, which permits the generic to accept the deal,
17 and as shown on the picture, if you follow the orange
18 bracket, which for my colorblind eyes looks a lot like
19 the yellow I must say, those are the ranges of times
20 for mutually agreeable settlements that are opened up
21 by the opportunity to link net consideration to the
22 settlement of the patent dispute.

23 My analysis shows there are those times for
24 entry which will satisfy both the incumbent and the
25 generic in the linked settlement and also be on the

1 early side of the mean probable date of entry so that
2 those settlements with net consideration are favorable
3 for consumers.

4 Q. And why are they favorable for consumers?

5 A. They're favorable for consumers because they
6 entail entry that's earlier than the mean probable date
7 of entry under litigation.

8 Q. Well, if settlements with net consideration
9 were banned, how would that impact consumers in this
10 particular demonstrative?

11 A. If the parties were not enabled, because of a
12 ban, to use net consideration, there would be no deal.
13 The result would necessarily in this analysis be
14 litigation, and the impact of litigation on consumers
15 is that it yields consumers only the mean probable date
16 of entry under litigation, which is later than the
17 entry date that would be enabled by some agreements
18 which do entail net consideration.

19 Q. Are all possible settlements with net
20 consideration beneficial to consumers or social
21 welfare?

22 A. Absolutely not. The orange bracket shows the
23 ones that are, but in fact, it's conceivable that there
24 would be agreements with more net consideration that
25 lie to the right of the mean probable date of entry and

1 that, therefore, would be adverse to consumers'
2 interests.

3 Q. Can you determine that from the model, whether
4 the outcome is going to be welfare-enhancing or not?

5 A. No, what the model shows is that without the
6 right to use net consideration, it could be impossible
7 to attain a socially favorable settlement. The model
8 doesn't tell you whether a settlement in and of itself
9 is a good one or a bad one for consumers.

10 Q. Why don't you take your seat again.

11 Well, why won't incumbents always give generics
12 so much money in settlements that will push the date
13 beyond the entry date under litigation?

14 A. A wise incumbent will understand that there's
15 legal considerations and antitrust risk that should
16 lead it to behave in a cautious manner towards these
17 kinds of settlements.

18 Q. Is there any basis in economics for assuming
19 that an anti-competitive incentive will always result
20 in anti-competitive conduct?

21 A. We always think when we're doing antitrust
22 economics that on the one hand there may be business or
23 profit incentives to do things that may or may not be
24 legally impermissible but that on the other side there
25 is the awareness of the business decision-makers about

1 what are the lines that are drawn or the forces that
2 bear on them from antitrust, and the whole purpose of
3 doing antitrust analysis as an economist is to try to
4 infuse antitrust policy with the message which when
5 received by the business community will lead to good
6 outcomes instead of bad outcomes.

7 Q. Let's go back to Professor Bresnahan's
8 assumptions and try to compare them to yours.

9 What is the underlying assumption in the
10 Bresnahan model relating to risk?

11 A. That there's absolutely no risk aversion that
12 affects the willingness of the incumbent to settle.

13 Q. And does that mean that his assumption is risk
14 neutrality?

15 A. Yes.

16 Q. Did you see any proof in Professor Bresnahan's
17 testimony of the risk neutrality assumption?

18 A. No, as I recall his testimony on the subject,
19 he said he saw no signs of risk aversion.

20 Q. Assuming there was no evidence as to whether
21 firms were risk neutral or risk averse, would there be
22 a reason to prefer the Bresnahan model to the Willig
23 model?

24 A. Tricky wording, Counsel. I prefer the Willig
25 approach to be sure, because I think that the correct

1 general presumption is that risk aversion is an
2 important force among corporate decision-makers in the
3 presence of risk.

4 Q. If we throw out the Bresnahan model because of
5 the absence of -- because of the use of risk
6 neutrality, what then can we say about whether net
7 consideration establishes a payment to delay?

8 A. In an analytic framework that accepts the idea
9 of risk aversion like mine and unlike the one actually
10 employed by Professor Bresnahan, a finding of the
11 conveyance of net consideration in and of itself cannot
12 be the foundation for an inference of anti-competitive
13 effect.

14 Q. All right, we're going to put up a new
15 demonstrative. This is at tab 6. This is SPX 2331.

16 With Your Honor's indulgence, I would like
17 Professor Willig to go back to the board.

18 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, you may.

19 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

20 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: And if I may, I will help him
21 put up the next demonstrative.

22 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay.

23 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Thank you.

24 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

25 Q. Can you identify SPX 2331 for us?

1 A. Is that this chart, Counsel?

2 Q. That chart, yes.

3 A. Okay, this is another demonstrative for my
4 analysis.

5 Q. And can you explain what misplaced optimism is?

6 A. Yes. This chart is very much like the last one
7 in terms of the various elements that it has. Once
8 again, the reservation time for the incumbent is to the
9 left of the mean probable date because of risk aversion
10 or other litigation costs, but now what's different
11 underlying this analysis is that the possible entering
12 generic is optimistic about its chances of prevailing
13 in the underlying patent dispute. This is drawn so
14 that the incumbent is not pessimistic nor is it
15 optimistic but instead has a realistic assessment of
16 the chances of prevailing.

17 It's not zero one, it's still probabilistic,
18 but the incumbent is realistic about that risk, but
19 what's pictured here is where the generic is
20 excessively optimistic relative to what we, the
21 analyst, know to be the true odds, which this analysis
22 assumes is information and knowledge shared by the
23 incumbent. So, that's what's different.

24 That difference drives yet another reason on
25 top of the reason that we were just talking about,

1 namely, the cash-strappedness of the generic entrant,
2 but here, due to the optimism of the generic, it thinks
3 it's got a better shot at winning the patent dispute
4 than we, the analyst, know to be the case, and the
5 result is that the optimistic generic is holding out
6 for a very early entry date, because that's what it
7 thinks is equivalent from its point of view to
8 litigation, because it thinks it's got especially
9 favorable odds of prevailing in that litigation.

10 So, the generic will not accept any entry date
11 in a pure patent-splitting agreement that is anywhere
12 later than the end of its arrow, but like in the
13 cash-strapped case, we can see that there is a gap
14 between the ends of the arrows, which means that if we
15 just stick to a straight patent-splitting agreement,
16 there's no deal. These two parties cannot come to an
17 agreement. Even though the incumbent is risk averse
18 and very anxious to offload the risk, which is why the
19 arrow is to the left of the mean, still the
20 over-optimism of the generic as pictured overcomes that
21 degree of willingness to settle on the part of the
22 incumbent, and a gap remains as a result of the
23 excessive optimism.

24 Q. How can we get a deal in this situation?

25 A. In this situation, there's one way to get a

1 deal, and that is to permit net consideration to flow
2 from the incumbent to the overly optimistic generic.
3 That payment of net consideration can close the gap,
4 and my analysis shows that in these kinds of situations
5 there may very well be a range of settlement dates
6 which can be supported by an agreement with a side
7 deal, with net consideration, and that moreover, in
8 these cases there exist side deals with net
9 consideration that still leaves consumers positively
10 better off than consumers would be under litigation.

11 Q. And what impact would there be on social
12 welfare if net consideration was banned in this
13 situation?

14 A. Well, in this situation, if net consideration
15 were not permitted to flow or if it were suppressed or
16 discouraged sufficiently by legal policy, mistaken
17 policy in my view, then there could be no settlement,
18 and consumers would wind up instead facing the outcome
19 of litigation, which outcome has this mean probable
20 date which is later than what the consumers might
21 obtain from a settlement that were made possible by the
22 flow of net consideration.

23 Q. You've already said that Professor Bresnahan
24 assumed risk neutrality in his model. Did he assume
25 that generics would not be over-optimistic?

1 A. In his analysis leading to the Bresnahan rule,
2 he doesn't seem to take into account optimism or
3 pessimism, and yet in his report, when he's introducing
4 the entire framework, he does seem to take optimism
5 very much into account, but he fails to put the
6 optimism together with the rest of his analysis to
7 uncover cases of this kind, and cases of this kind are
8 totally the opposite, contradictory, to what he asserts
9 is his policy conclusion.

10 Q. Why don't you take your seat again, and we are
11 going to turn to tab 18. This is SPX 2991,
12 demonstrative for identification, and we have two
13 quotes from Richard Posner.

14 Who is Richard Posner?

15 A. Richard Posner is the chief judge of the
16 Circuit Court in Chicago, Seventh Circuit, but more --
17 I shouldn't betray my prejudices, but even more
18 important than that, he has had a great career as a
19 scholar and is really very much the founder of the
20 modern field of law and economics and I think a future
21 Nobel Laureate for that purpose.

22 Q. Okay, let's -- let me read these two quotes.
23 The first one:

24 "The three factors thus far identified as
25 affecting the decision to settle rather than

1 litigate -- the relative costs of litigation and
2 settlement, the parties' attitudes toward risk, and
3 differences between the parties' judgment of the likely
4 outcome if the case is litigated -- are interacting."

5 Now let me read the second quote.

6 "A settlement negotiation is an example of
7 decision making under conditions of uncertainty. In
8 such a context, successful completion of the
9 negotiation is affected not only by the costs of
10 negotiation relative to those of the alternative
11 decision-making procedure (here litigation) but also by
12 the parties' attitude toward risk and by any
13 differences between the parties' judgments on the
14 likely outcomes under the alternative procedure."

15 In terms of what Judge Posner is identifying
16 here, are the conditions here similar or different than
17 the conditions in your model?

18 A. No, this is a very apt description of some of
19 the features of my analysis we've just been discussing.
20 The parties' attitude toward risk, mentioned here
21 specifically is about risk aversion, and differences
22 between the parties' judgments on the likely outcomes
23 under the alternative procedure, namely litigation, is
24 the element that was just introduced in this
25 demonstrative under the rubric of misplaced optimism.

1 Q. Professor Willig, did you arrive at your
2 conclusions by just drawing things on a chart or did
3 you do something else?

4 A. No, actually, I don't draw very well. This is
5 a demonstrative that illustrates the results of an
6 analysis that I undertook using the tools and the
7 language of economic analysis, algebra and symbols and
8 equations and the like.

9 Q. Okay, let's turn to tab 7, SPX 2321, and this
10 has several pages in it. Can you identify this for us?

11 A. Yes, these are some pages from one of the
12 appendices to my report in this case, and this is the
13 part that begins to set up the analytic model. In
14 particular, it's the part that begins to define the
15 notation and is directed at uncovering the private
16 incentives to settle, i.e., the analysis that
17 undergirds the location of the boxes on the
18 demonstratives that portray the incentives of the
19 incumbent and the litigating entrant.

20 Q. Okay, let's turn to SPX 2326 at tab 19. Can
21 you identify this for us?

22 A. Uh-huh, that's a diagram that illustrates in a
23 more technical mode the analytics that appear in the
24 exhibit that we were just talking about.

25 Q. And is this part of your report also?

1 A. Yes, this was part of my report.

2 Q. Let's turn to SPX 2322. This is tab 8. Can
3 you tell us what this is?

4 A. This is also part of the -- one of the
5 appendices to my report. It continues with the
6 portrayal of the analytics, in this portion
7 particularly focusing on the social evaluation of a
8 settlement, i.e., how to understand from the analytics
9 whether a particular settlement is one that consumers
10 would find favorable to litigation or not.

11 Q. Okay, let's turn to SPX 2323, tab 9. Can you
12 identify this for us?

13 A. This is also a part of one of the appendices to
14 my report, and it continues on with the portrayal of
15 the analytics that I was just describing, in this case
16 going on to represent analytically in the model the
17 impacts of risk aversion and also discounting for the
18 time value of money.

19 Q. Let's turn to SPX 2327. This is at tab 20.
20 Can you identify this for us?

21 A. Yes, this is another pictorial that helps the
22 student of algebra and economic analysis better
23 understand the impact of the analysis that first shows
24 up in the section of the previous exhibit labeled Risk
25 Aversion.

1 Q. Let's turn to SPX 2309 at tab 10. Can you
2 identify this for us, please?

3 A. This is a demonstrative that was completed soon
4 after the time of my report which gathers together the
5 analytics to complete the analysis of the case
6 represented on the picture; namely, settlements with
7 misplaced optimism.

8 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, we offer into
9 evidence SPX 2321, 2322, 2323, 2326, 2327 and 2309.

10 MR. GIDLEY: No objection, Your Honor.

11 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Any objection?

12 MS. CREIGHTON: Just one moment, Your Honor.
13 No objection, Your Honor.

14 JUDGE CHAPPELL: SPX 2321, 2322, 2323, 2326,
15 2327 and 2309 are admitted.

16 (SPX Exhibit Numbers 2321, 2323, 2326, 2327,
17 2309 and 2322 were admitted into evidence.)

18 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

19 Q. Professor Willig, I would like you, with Your
20 Honor's indulgence, to go back to the board again. We
21 are going to try another model. This is SPX 2334, tab
22 21.

23 With Your Honor's indulgence, I will go help.

24 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Sure, go ahead.

25 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

1 Q. Okay, SPX 2334 is now up on your board, and
2 it's Entry by a Third Party. Can you explain what
3 "entry by a third party" means?

4 A. Yes, this is an illustration of my analysis of
5 a situation which is somewhat different than the ones
6 just covered in the following respect. This analysis
7 assumes that there will be a third party entering this
8 market sometime during the time span of the life of the
9 patent, and this third-party entrant is not subject to
10 the litigation.

11 This is not the same thing as the litigating
12 entrant. This is another firm who is going to enter,
13 and the possibility of that firm's entry is understood
14 both by the incumbent and by the litigating entrant.
15 So, this is what we say is common knowledge, the fact
16 of or the possibility of the third-party entry is
17 common knowledge to the other players in this
18 circumstance.

19 Q. Does the common knowledge relate to certain
20 entry?

21 A. Actually, the way the algebra is cast, there's
22 a certainty to the entry, but I think this model is
23 robust. It's just an added complication to the
24 mathematics to put in some probabilities of entry at
25 different possible times by this third-party entrant.

1 Q. Okay. How is third-party entry affecting our
2 reservation dates here?

3 A. Well, it's interesting. Notice from the
4 description of the incumbent in the box that in this
5 model, I am assuming away risk aversion, and I am
6 assuming away litigation costs. I don't assume them
7 away because I think they're inapplicable. I continue
8 to think that they are applicable, to be sure, but
9 following common economic practice, when there's a new
10 analysis done that's being driven by a different
11 effect, it's really useful analytically to strip away
12 as many of the other parts of the backdrop that are
13 necessary to provide clarity, provided that that
14 doesn't swing the conclusion in an important way.
15 Swinging the conclusion by leaving something pertinent
16 out is not a good analytic process.

17 But here, the differences between the other
18 cases and third-party entry cases survive and are
19 actually clarified by leaving out the added
20 complications of risk aversion and litigation costs.
21 So, here, interestingly, the incumbent who expects
22 further entry will accept these settlements, and the
23 reservation date of entry that the incumbent is willing
24 to accept is systematically on the early side of the
25 mean probable date of entry under litigation.

1 Let me define a little more clearly here what
2 is that mean probable date. Here, this mean probable
3 date does not include the entry of the third party.
4 Rather, it has the same meaning that it's had on the
5 previous demonstratives; namely, it's the mean probable
6 date of entry by the litigating entrant, because that's
7 the date that is the natural point of comparison with
8 the date of entry by the litigating entrant as the date
9 of settlement. So, this reflects the date of entry by
10 the litigating entrant's entry, not the date of entry
11 by the third party.

12 So, here the incumbent is willing to go to the
13 early side of this mean probable date, and the reason
14 basically is that the out-years, the portion of this
15 time scale after the entry has occurred by the third
16 party, is really of less importance to the incumbent
17 because of the extent of competition that will be in
18 the market at that time, so the profit opportunity is
19 less, which makes that part of the time scale less
20 important to the incumbent and therefore pushes the
21 time at which the incumbent is willing to settle to the
22 left of the mean probable date.

23 For the very same kind of reason, the generic,
24 who also shares that same expectation of further entry,
25 will also only accept these settlements, also moves

1 significantly to the early side of the mean probable
2 date of entry. In this model, because the stakes in
3 the entry by the third party are different as between
4 the incumbent and the generic, their reservation dates
5 don't necessarily move to the same extent to the early
6 time, and as shown here, because of that difference in
7 stake that they have, there is a gap between their
8 reservation dates.

9 I think the most interesting part of the change
10 in the scenario due to the analysis of third-party
11 entry is what happens to the impact on consumer
12 welfare. Here, as shown, it's quite possible that the
13 break-even entry date from the consumer perspective is
14 moved to the right of the mean probable date of entry
15 under litigation. Here, consumers are willing to wait,
16 if they have to -- they would rather not wait -- but if
17 they had to wait, they would be willing to wait until
18 after the mean probable date of entry for a reason that
19 I think is easy to understand from the analysis.

20 The biggest benefit that consumers can get
21 comes from the portion of the time line when the
22 litigating entrant is in and also the third party
23 entrant is in, as well as the incumbent being in,
24 because in my analysis, I have assumed that when all
25 three of those firms are there, the outcome is highly

1 competitive, very advantageous to consumers, and so
2 consumers really relishing the opportunity to have a
3 period of time when that occurs -- and it's bound to
4 occur under a settlement and not bound to occur under
5 litigation -- are willing to wait longer for entry
6 under settlement if they have to. This comes out of
7 the math as a real live possibility.

8 Q. What happens here if net consideration was
9 banned?

10 A. There's a systematic gap in the analysis. It's
11 not just an area in between, it's a systematic gap
12 between the reservation dates of the generic and the
13 incumbent in this model because of the entry by the
14 third party. So, without net consideration, there is
15 not going to be a settlement which entails just a
16 patent split date, and as a result, consumers miss out,
17 are forced to accept the results of litigation, which
18 systematically is not going to give them the benefit of
19 having all three parties in the market in the out
20 portion of the time period with a high enough
21 probability to make consumers fully happy.

22 But with net consideration, the gap can be
23 closed, as the picture illustrates and the math makes
24 clear. There's plenty of circumstances where the
25 opportunity to use net consideration creates the

1 opportunity for a mutually advantageous settlement as
2 between the incumbent and the generic, settlements
3 which can be quite a bit preferable for consumers than
4 simply waiting for the litigation to produce its mean
5 probable entry date.

6 Q. Professor, if you would take your seat.

7 A. Thank you. Before I do that, if you don't
8 mind?

9 Q. Okay, one more thing you need to say?

10 A. Yeah, well, I kept pointing to the mean
11 probable date of entry, but the consumer arrow may very
12 well go to the right of there, and so the
13 welfare-enhancing settlements under net consideration
14 start here, but they do go past the mean probable date
15 of entry. I think I was slightly misleading in my
16 terminology.

17 The range of those settlements made possible
18 with net consideration, which are preferable to
19 consumers, in this case do go to the later side of the
20 mean probable date of entry. So, that is a
21 conservative view of what keeps consumers whole
22 vis-a-vis litigation.

23 I think the reason is that here there's a
24 distinction between the mean probable date of entry
25 from the consumer perspective, taking into account

1 consumer surplus, and that becomes different than the
2 statistical mean date of entry under litigation, which
3 doesn't fully reflect the consumer perspective. So, in
4 my analysis, I've created an understanding of where the
5 arrow goes to by looking directly at the impact on
6 consumers, not just concerning myself with a
7 statistical measure of the mean entry date.

8 Q. Thank you.

9 So, I'd like to ask you about some conclusions
10 we can draw from this model. Is risk aversion
11 necessary to achieve welfare-enhancing results in
12 settlements in your models?

13 A. Well, no, in the previous examples, risk
14 aversion was an intrinsic part of what led to that
15 conclusion, but here, in the case of entry by a third
16 party, there's no risk aversion in my simplified
17 analysis, and nevertheless, there is the possible,
18 vital role of net consideration in attaining
19 settlements that will be favorable to consumers as well
20 as more generally favorable as we discussed earlier
21 today.

22 Q. Is over-optimism necessary to achieve
23 welfare-enhancing results in settlements in your
24 models?

25 A. Well, that was the driving force in the last

1 model that we illustrated, but there is no
2 over-optimism here. In fact, I'm not sure I mentioned
3 it, but let me explain that in the entry by a third
4 party analysis, in the mathematics pictured in this
5 demonstrative, the expectations statistically that the
6 parties hold about the strength of the underlying
7 patent litigation, the probabilities are assumed to be
8 in common with each other and accurate from the point
9 of view of the outside analyst; namely, me writing the
10 algebra down.

11 Q. Okay. And is another thing we've learned here
12 that settlements that postpone entry beyond the
13 expected date of entry in litigation can be
14 pro-competitive?

15 A. Yes, as I was just explaining here, the
16 statistical measure of the mean probable date of entry
17 actually is not an accurate reflection of the full
18 consumer perspective. When the consumer perspective is
19 built into the applicable mean, in fact, the
20 reservation time for consumers moves to the later side
21 of the merely statistical mean probable date of entry
22 under litigation.

23 Q. I'd like you to turn, Professor, to tab 11.
24 This is SPX 2311. Can you identify that for us?

25 A. Yes, this is another demonstrative which was

1 prepared soon after the time of my report which sets
2 out the algebra underlying what the case is that has
3 been illustrated by this demonstrative.

4 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, we offer SPX 2311
5 for identification into evidence.

6 MS. CREIGHTON: No objection, Your Honor.

7 MR. GIDLEY: No objection, Your Honor.

8 JUDGE CHAPPELL: SPX 2311 is admitted.

9 (SPX Exhibit Number 2311 was admitted into
10 evidence.)

11 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, this would be a
12 good time for a break. We are going to go into another
13 long demonstrative.

14 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Well, let's talk about timing.
15 Who's the next witness today?

16 MR. NIELDS: Professor Willig is the last
17 witness for today.

18 JUDGE CHAPPELL: And then respondents will
19 rest?

20 MR. NIELDS: We will call no further witnesses.

21 MR. CURRAN: That's right, Your Honor, there
22 are still some document issues perhaps that need to be
23 addressed.

24 JUDGE CHAPPELL: What about rebuttal?

25 MS. BOKAT: Pursuant to the Court's request, we

1 did some further juggling of witnesses and will be
2 prepared to call our first rebuttal witness next
3 Wednesday morning.

4 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Wednesday morning?

5 MS. BOKAT: Yes, Your Honor.

6 MR. CURRAN: Your Honor, on that subject, I
7 indicated earlier that we would be filing a motion
8 related to the proper scope of the rebuttal case. We
9 have prepared a motion, and we expect to present it to
10 Your Honor, courtesy copy, in Open Court right after
11 the lunch break.

12 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Will complaint counsel be able
13 to prepare an expedited response?

14 MS. BOKAT: We have not seen it yet.

15 MR. CURRAN: Right, let me clarify. It's being
16 prepared. It will be done during the lunch break.
17 We'll sign it, we'll serve it, we'll file it, and we'll
18 present Your Honor with a courtesy copy after the lunch
19 break.

20 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I would like to be able, if
21 necessary, to hear argument on that perhaps Tuesday
22 afternoon so that we can keep moving along, but I'll
23 wait until you have a chance to look at the motion, Ms.
24 Bokat.

25 MS. BOKAT: Thank you, Your Honor.

1 MR. CURRAN: Your Honor, if you're looking for
2 ways to fill time, another possibility would be, you'll
3 recall we filed a motion for a directed verdict.

4 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Right.

5 MR. CURRAN: And at the time we stated that we
6 were going to be filing such a motion, there was some
7 discussion of possible oral argument on that. We do
8 request oral argument on that, and if Your Honor saw
9 fit, early next week would be an appropriate time in
10 our view.

11 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'll consider that.

12 Why don't we go ahead and take our lunch break
13 then if this is our last witness today, and we'll have
14 a recess until 2:15. Thanks.

15 (Whereupon, at 1:15 p.m., a lunch recess was
16 taken.)

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

1 AFTERNOON SESSION

2 (2:15 p.m.)

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Mr. Schildkraut, whenever
4 you're ready.

5 MR. CURRAN: Your Honor, as promised, I do have
6 a courtesy copy of our motion to limit rebuttal
7 witnesses. May I present that to Your Honor?

8 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

9 MR. CURRAN: Moments ago, it was served upon
10 complaint counsel and Schering.

11 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you.

12 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

13 Q. Professor Willig, I have put up another
14 demonstrative. This is tab 22 of the book. It's SPX
15 2335 for identification, and it's entitled Signaling.

16 Can you telling us what signaling is?

17 A. Yes, signaling is the name given in economics
18 these days for the phenomenon where there are at least
19 two parties interacting with each other, and one party
20 has superior information than the other party has about
21 some feature of the environment that is of mutual
22 concern. Not only does one party have better
23 information, but the other party understands that the
24 first party has superior information. Even though the
25 party in that understanding doesn't know the

1 information, it knows the other party has better
2 information.

3 Signaling refers to the use of some
4 articulation, some offer, could be money, could be some
5 object, could be some rights, could be some appearance
6 by the party with the superior information who manages
7 to convey the information that it knows better than the
8 other party to the other party.

9 Q. Is this an accepted phenomena in economics?

10 A. This is a very exciting and important new area
11 of economics, new since -- I should qualify the word
12 "new" -- new since the time that I first went to
13 school, which means it's getting quite old. In fact,
14 this entire area of economic inquiry just was the
15 subject of a triple award of the Nobel Prize a few
16 months ago to Professors Akerloff and Spence and
17 Stiglitz for their work on the subject of asymmetric
18 information. One part of the word award went to
19 Michael Spence on his seminal work some 20-25 years ago
20 on the subject of signaling. The other third -- the
21 first third of the prize went to George Akerloff for
22 pointing out that under circumstances of asymmetric
23 information of the kind that I just explained, there's
24 a real problem in parties making mutually beneficial
25 deals.

1 Q. What is the relationship between signaling and
2 asymmetric information?

3 A. When two parties cannot come to a mutually
4 beneficial arrangement because of asymmetric
5 information, signaling is a device that the party with
6 the better information can employ so as to convey the
7 missing information and make the deal work.

8 Q. Can you give us an everyday example of this?

9 A. One example that I use with my students when
10 they're thinking about how to comport themselves at job
11 interviews is to suggest that they dress up very well
12 and groom very well, and when they say why, just for
13 representative of a potential employer, but they're
14 coming here, and the rest of us look like slobs, so why
15 shouldn't I continue with my normal everyday behavior?

16 And the economist's answer is, signal by
17 dressing up very well and grooming very well to show
18 your potential employer that you can do it and that
19 you're willing to do that and that you're the kind of
20 potential employee who understands the need to show
21 respect. And although there's really nothing to being
22 dressed up in the middle of an ordinary school day, the
23 signal it conveys is viewed as very useful to the
24 student's employment prospects.

25 Q. Let me give you another example, used cars.

1 Can you convey a signal in trying to buy used cars?

2 A. I'm not kidding, this is actually the setting
3 of Professor Akerloff's Nobel Prize winning article,
4 was used cars and what he called the lemons problem.
5 In that setting, the problem is that if you're
6 interested in buying a used car and you notice that I
7 am stepping forward to sell you mine, you rationally
8 take the implication that the used car that I'm
9 offering you is actually a lemon.

10 Why do you take that implication? Because on
11 average, if it were a good car, I'd be hanging onto it.
12 I wouldn't be trying to sell it to you. And so the
13 mere fact that I'm proffering it conveys information
14 which is asymmetrically held between us. I know the
15 car, I've been driving it, you haven't, so I know, but
16 by offering it, I'm actually suggesting to you the
17 adverse implication that this used car is a lemon.
18 That stops you from buying the car, even though it
19 might be a good car, and so we're not able to make a
20 mutually advantageous deal because of adverse selection
21 and asymmetric information, and this was first conveyed
22 by the lemons model of Professor Akerloff.

23 The signaling that might help to close that gap
24 occurs, for example, where the owner of the used car
25 says to the buyer, I'm not selling this to you because

1 it's a lemon. I'm offering it because I've been called
2 away to Europe for my job, and I can't put the car on
3 the boat, so I have to sell the car. Therefore, you
4 shouldn't take the implication from my offering it that
5 it's actually a lemon. It's just a good used car that
6 I've been holding onto, but now I can't use it anymore,
7 so please, accept this as a good one. That would be a
8 successful signal to break the logjam caused by the
9 asymmetric information.

10 Q. And what is the application of signaling to a
11 litigation dispute between a generic and a patent
12 holder when they're litigating over patent rights?

13 A. Well, I think it's natural to understand that
14 in those circumstances, the incumbent patent holder
15 might very well have superior information as compared
16 to the litigating entrant about the value of the rights
17 that are at dispute in the patent litigation. For
18 example, the patent holder may have better information
19 concerning new technologies that it may itself have in
20 development that may be valuable for the incumbent but
21 which would at some time in the foreseeable future
22 undermine the value of the rights to the product whose
23 patent it is that's in dispute.

24 Or alternatively, the patent-holding incumbent
25 may have superior information about the progress that

1 other possible generic entrants are making toward
2 themselves entering the market in a way that would
3 actually shorten the useful economic life of the patent
4 from the point of view of the litigating entrant. In
5 those circumstances, the incumbent, the patent holder,
6 may very well actually have asymmetric information, and
7 whether or not that firm actually has it, it's
8 certainly natural to imagine that the litigating
9 entrant supposes that the incumbent may very well have
10 such superior information.

11 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, may Professor
12 Willig approach the easel?

13 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

14 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

15 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

16 Q. We are now looking at SPX 2335, which is at tab
17 22. Could you explain your model to us and how it
18 works?

19 A. Yes, well, this is an analysis, a demonstrative
20 that captures a simplified version of the effects that
21 I was just trying to explain. Here, the incumbent is
22 the one who knows whether the economic life of the
23 patent that's under dispute is long or short. There
24 are these two possibilities, and it is the incumbent
25 who knows the truth about those two possibilities.

1 The litigating entrant understands that the
2 incumbent knows the truth about that circumstance, but
3 the litigating entrant doesn't itself know which of
4 those two possibilities actually applies. So, that's
5 the basic setup.

6 This -- the end of the yellow line here is the
7 end of the economic life of the patent of the long
8 kind, not the short kind, and the mean probable date of
9 entry line that we're used to looking at here is drawn
10 for the circumstance where the life is long, but, of
11 course, the life might be short instead.

12 The arrow which pictures the reservation times
13 for the incumbent is drawn on the basis of having a
14 risk averse incumbent, and it's drawn for the situation
15 where the incumbent happens to know that the economic
16 life of the patent is of the long variety, and that's
17 what makes the reservation time of the incumbent be
18 where it is to the left of the mean probable date line
19 under the circumstance where the life is long. Usually
20 it's drawn to the left of that line because of risk
21 aversion and other litigation costs.

22 If it is the case that the life is long, then
23 consumers have a preference for settlement if that
24 settlement occurs on the early side or up, to and
25 including the mean probable date of entry. So, it's

1 the usual sort of consumer-oriented arrow that we have
2 here.

3 The part that's really different has to do with
4 the incentives of the generic. Here, remember, the
5 generic is the one who doesn't know whether the life of
6 the patent is truly long or short in economic terms,
7 and, of course, the entrant is skeptical. The entrant
8 is concerned that the true life of the patent may be
9 short, not long. The entrant is rightfully concerned
10 that it can't expect the incumbent to tell it the
11 truth. After all, they're in negotiation, anything
12 articulated is subject to interpretation by the
13 generic, so the generic is skeptical, and as a result,
14 the generic is holding out for a relatively soon entry
15 time because of its justified fear that it may be the
16 case that the economic life of the patent is short and
17 that, in fact, the incumbent is well aware of that.

18 So, the result is the gap. Once again, there's
19 an impasse gap. Just like the used car that could not
20 be transacted, we have a gap between the willingness of
21 the generic to accept a later entry time, which it
22 would if it knew that the life of the patent was long,
23 but it doesn't know that, and the earliest date at
24 which the incumbent is willing to allow entry in the
25 settlement, because it, in fact, knows that the life of

1 the patent in this circumstance is on the long side.
2 So, there is a gap, and this gap is going to stop a
3 worthwhile agreement from being accepted by both sides
4 unless they are able to employ some device for
5 signaling that will allow the information about the
6 true life of the patent to be conveyed from the
7 incumbent to the litigating entrant.

8 In this scenario, the offer of a settlement
9 with sufficient net consideration takes on the role of
10 the signal. The mathematics that I've worked through
11 shows that there are welfare-enhancing settlements that
12 are made possible by the conveyance of net
13 consideration because the offer of the net
14 consideration would not be worthwhile for the incumbent
15 to make if the incumbent knew that the economic life of
16 the patent were short. So, by making the offer of an
17 entry date together with a measured amount of net
18 consideration tells the skeptical litigating entrant
19 that, in fact, ah, the incumbent must recognize that
20 the life of the patent is long. Otherwise, that party
21 wouldn't find it in its own interest to make this
22 offer. The offer is being made, therefore I take the
23 inference that the life of the patent is long, in which
24 case the settlement date is not such a bad deal for me.

25 So, here, the orange bracket shows the dates of

1 settlement that in this example can be supported by
2 that very kind of agreement that has conveyance of net
3 consideration as a signal to break the logjam caused by
4 the information asymmetry.

5 In this class of cases, the bracket shows not
6 only the ability to make a settlement where otherwise
7 there is only a gap, but it shows that this range of
8 settlements that are made possible by the passage of
9 net consideration are desirable for consumers to give
10 consumers more competition, more consumer surplus than
11 consumers would otherwise be getting on average if
12 instead the parties were driven to litigation by the
13 asymmetric information impasse.

14 Q. And what would happen if net consideration was
15 prohibited in this example?

16 A. In this example, if net consideration were
17 prohibited, then the gap would apply. There could be
18 no settlement. There would be litigation. The
19 risk-bearing costs that would follow from litigation
20 would fall on the incumbent, and consumers would be
21 held to the mean probable date of entry under
22 litigation given that the life was long, which is on
23 the later side of some of the deals that could be
24 supported had net consideration been allowed.

25 Q. Now, you said the risk-bearing costs. Is that

1 because the incumbent is risk averse?

2 A. Yes, in this example, the incumbent is risk
3 averse.

4 Q. Can you give me an example in real life of risk
5 aversion?

6 A. Well, here, for example, this is an incumbent
7 who would be quick to buy insurance to cover business
8 risks outside of this context, because that's a sign of
9 the kind of costs of bearing risk that can be avoided
10 by the purchase of an insurance policy. You buy the
11 insurance policy, you offload the risk to the insurance
12 carrier, and you're willing to pay the insurance
13 carrier to perform that service for you as a company.

14 Here, what's happening is that the incumbent is
15 willing to move the date of settlement on the early
16 side as its way of paying for the insurance to get out
17 from under the endemic risk caused by being in the
18 litigation posture.

19 Q. Take your seat.

20 I'm now going to tab 12, which is SPX 2324, and
21 could you identify this for us?

22 A. Yes, this is a portion of one of the appendices
23 to my report which goes through the analytics necessary
24 to do the analysis which is portrayed on the
25 demonstrative that we were just discussing.

1 Q. Okay. Could you now turn to tab 23, SPX 2329.
2 Can you identify this for us?

3 A. Yes, this is a diagram from that same appendix
4 to my report, and actually it's an exhibit to my
5 report, which illustrates some of the math that is laid
6 out in the demonstrative that we just discussed.

7 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, we offer SPX 2324
8 and 2329 into evidence.

9 MS. CREIGHTON: No objection, Your Honor.

10 MR. GIDLEY: No objection, Your Honor.

11 JUDGE CHAPPELL: SPX 2324 and 2329 are
12 admitted.

13 (SPX Exhibit Numbers 2324 and 2329 were
14 admitted into evidence.)

15 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

16 Q. All right, now let's turn to tab 13.

17 If I may approach, Your Honor, I'd like to put
18 up another board.

19 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, you may.

20 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

21 Q. I've put up an SPX 2333 on the screen and on
22 the board, and it's entitled Varied Assessments of
23 Success.

24 Can you tell us what that is?

25 A. Yes, the idea of varied assessments of success

1 is that where both the incumbent and the litigating
2 entrant have their own ideas about the probabilities of
3 the underlying patent litigation going their own way,
4 and it's said to be varied here because this particular
5 demonstrative shows one of the cases where neither of
6 them actually have it right from the point of view of
7 the outside observer, we who are defining these
8 analytics, they each have their own ideas about those
9 probabilities.

10 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, may Professor
11 Willig approach the easel?

12 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, he may.

13 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

14 Q. Could you explain this to us using the
15 demonstrative?

16 A. I'll certainly try, Counsel.

17 Here, the incumbent has a view of the chances
18 of its success in the underlying patent litigation that
19 are on the pessimistic side. Now, I want to emphasize
20 the power of the social scientist here. We, the
21 analysts, are standing outside this context, and we
22 think we know the true odds. In fact, we've defined
23 what those true odds really are. And the mean probable
24 date of entry under litigation line, as usual, on the
25 demonstrative reflects the outside analyst's view of

1 what are the true probabilities.

2 The incumbent it turns out -- we can tell, the
3 outside analyst defining the scenario -- the incumbent
4 is on the pessimistic side of what we know to be the
5 truth. The incumbent actually at the end of the day
6 believes, all things taken into account, that it's less
7 likely to win the underlying patent case than we, the
8 outside analysts, think we know, and that's why on this
9 diagram the incumbent shows up with a reservation time
10 that is to the early side of the mean probable date of
11 entry given the true probabilities that the outside
12 analyst assigns.

13 Notice here the incumbent is not assumed to be
14 risk averse, again, not because risk aversion is not an
15 endemic part of a context like this, but rather,
16 because the impact of varied assessments of success
17 makes its own point without needing to be intermixed
18 with risk aversion and other costs of litigation.

19 Meanwhile, the generic, as per varied
20 assessments of success the outside analyst can
21 ascertain in setting up this context, the litigating
22 entrant is on the optimistic side of what the analyst
23 defines as the true odds. So, the generic thinks it's
24 more likely to win than the analyst thinks is the case,
25 and for that reason, the entrant is holding out for an

1 earlier entry time than the mean, and in fact, as drawn
2 in this example, the optimism of the entrant is
3 actually stronger than the pessimism of the incumbent.

4 So, on net, they're at loggerheads because of
5 their varied assessments of success, and that leads to
6 there being a gap between their reservation dates --
7 once again, as we've seen in the other cases -- but now
8 for this different reason, they are not going to be
9 able to find a mutually agreeable settlement, because
10 there are no commonly acceptable dates for entry within
11 the setting.

12 Consumers, as usual, would be happy with a
13 settlement that leads to an entry date any time up to
14 the mean probable date of entry, but there is no
15 settlement possible here unless they use some other
16 dimension to help themselves close the gap.

17 If they're permitted to use net consideration,
18 then once again, as per the previous demonstratives,
19 the yellow bracket -- the orange bracket, rather, shows
20 the ranges of entry times that could be supported with
21 settlements that are undergirded by the passage of net
22 consideration from the incumbent to the entering
23 generic. The net consideration closes the gap, and the
24 orange bracket shows those times which they can agree
25 upon with net consideration that are also preferable

1 for consumers, because those are times to the early
2 side of the mean probable date of entry.

3 Q. Is there any assumption in this model that
4 differs from the assumptions that Professor Bresnahan
5 has made?

6 A. Well, yes and no. I mean, Professor Bresnahan
7 did not undertake an analysis that leads to his
8 conclusion about the so-called Bresnahan rule that
9 takes these varied assessments of success into account.

10 On the other hand, in his report, in fact,
11 Professor Bresnahan does discuss the possibilities of
12 pessimism and optimism and the possibilities that if
13 the total amount of optimism on net is sufficiently
14 great, there could be no agreement whatsoever. He
15 mentions that, yet he does not take that into his
16 analysis that for him undergirds his conclusion of the
17 appropriateness of the so-called Bresnahan rule.

18 Q. So, how, then, if he understands this does
19 Professor Bresnahan not get results that show that a
20 settlement with net consideration may result in entry
21 sooner than the mean probable entry date under
22 litigation?

23 A. He just didn't do this analysis.

24 Q. Why don't you take your seat.

25 Is a competitive outcome assured here? Are we

1 sure -- if we -- if we pay net consideration, are we
2 sure we're going to get a competitive outcome?

3 A. Oh, no, not necessarily. One can't tell from
4 this model whether the resulting settlement will be to
5 the left-hand side of the mean probable date and
6 therefore beneficial to consumers or whether it might
7 instead be the right-hand side. Rather, the model
8 shows that to get the preferable kinds of settlements
9 might very well necessitate the use of net
10 consideration.

11 Q. And how much net consideration would get you
12 the pro-competitive result?

13 A. Just enough to close that gap. There's a lot
14 of mathematics in the demonstrative to show what range
15 is consistent with a settlement entry date to the left
16 of the mean probable date.

17 Q. Okay, let's turn to tab 14, SPX 2312. Can you
18 identify this for us?

19 A. I'm sorry, what tab was that?

20 Q. Tab 14.

21 A. Yes, that's another demonstrative that I
22 created soon after the time of my report which
23 organizes the analytics specific to the case of
24 settlements to patent litigation with varied
25 assessments of success.

1 Q. And what does it show?

2 A. It shows the analytics that undergird this
3 demonstrative. It shows that there are circumstances
4 without risk aversion but with the disparate views of
5 the likelihoods of success in the underlying patent
6 litigation that I've just been explaining, that under
7 such circumstances it may very well be necessary for
8 the attainment of a pro-competitive settlement to
9 utilize net consideration.

10 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Your Honor, we offer SPX 2312
11 into evidence.

12 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, the version of SPX
13 2312 that we have is incomplete. There's a figure
14 that's attached to the original. I don't know if
15 that's -- if they're offering the whole thing or just
16 the incomplete version that's in the binder.

17 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Well, since I forgot the
18 figure, I can't offer the complete version.

19 Does that make any difference to your analysis,
20 whether you have that figure or not?

21 THE WITNESS: If it helps the reader to
22 understand the analytics better, then it's a good thing
23 and I'm all for it.

24 MS. CREIGHTON: Then, Your Honor, if counsel
25 proposes to substitute the complete version of SPX

1 2312, then we have no objection to that going into the
2 record.

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Why don't you just pull that
4 offer down until you have the proper version, okay?
5 Thank you.

6 BY MR. SCHILDKRAUT:

7 Q. So, Professor Willig, what did we learn by
8 applying your models?

9 A. Well, I think for me the main lesson is that
10 the so-called Bresnahan rule is really a dangerous rule
11 for the policy community or the legal community to
12 adopt. The work in its totality shows that there are
13 ample circumstances where net consideration is a very
14 useful tool to attain socially beneficial settlements
15 of patent disputes.

16 Q. Is this the -- the ones we have talked about
17 here today, is this a complete list of circumstances
18 where net consideration may be necessary to settle
19 patent disputes and still have an entry date which is
20 forward of the mean probable entry date under
21 litigation?

22 A. No, absolutely not. This is really an occasion
23 for a great amount of humility, because this is a very
24 fresh topic for economics. Economists to my knowledge
25 have been looking at this kind of issue only for a year

1 or two, which is a very short time in the passage of a
2 topic through the mill of academic economics. This is
3 a novel subject, and all we have here in the materials
4 that we've been discussing today and the materials in
5 my report for me are really just the beginning, and
6 I've in no way been able to, and nor have my
7 colleagues, undertake a search aimed at finding all of
8 the underlying features of reality that might be
9 important in these kinds of contexts that would lead
10 net consideration to be a valuable tool for obtaining
11 socially beneficial settlements of patent disputes.

12 This is just the -- a list of cases that I have
13 come to that fall into that category, but I have no
14 reason to believe that the list of features of reality
15 that lead to the importance of net consideration is in
16 any way limited to the list that I've been able to
17 testify about today.

18 Q. What have you learned about whether a
19 postponement of entry until after the mean probable
20 date of litigation is always anti-competitive?

21 A. I've learned from the model, the analysis that
22 includes the entry of a third party who was not a
23 patent litigant but rather just an entrant sometime
24 during the life of the patent, that that feature of the
25 context alone can lead to the possibility that

1 consumers can find settlements with entry dates to the
2 later side of the mean probable date of entry under
3 litigation to be beneficial for consumers.

4 Q. What have you learned about using net
5 consideration as evidence of an agreement to delay?

6 A. That would be an absolutely incorrect inference
7 from the point of view of even a slightly expanded set
8 of analyses over and above what Professor Bresnahan has
9 considered.

10 Q. But you're not saying that net consideration is
11 always pro-competitive, are you?

12 A. No, net consideration can undergird agreements
13 that would be quite adverse to consumers and might be
14 treated as such by the legal system.

15 Q. So, is this something that an economist would
16 think one would want to still look at?

17 A. Absolutely. There is every reason to at least
18 consider scrutinizing agreements which contain net
19 consideration as part and parcel of them.

20 Q. So, how should from your perspective one go
21 about determining the welfare effects of settlements
22 with net consideration?

23 A. The main point is that there's no shortcuts to
24 this analysis. Just using the shortcut of a finding of
25 net consideration that's positive does not lead in any

1 reliable way to a conclusion that the agreement
2 containing such positive net consideration is
3 anti-competitive. This would be a dangerous approach
4 from the point of view of my work.

5 Instead, since there are no shortcuts, the way
6 to proceed is a direct analysis of whether or not there
7 is harm to consumers from the agreement as it actually
8 stands in its context. All relevant forms of evidence
9 should be ready to be considered in my view by an
10 appropriate fact finding process, and in particular,
11 the underlying strength of the litigation, the patent
12 litigation, is apt to be an important part of the range
13 of relevant evidence to consider in reaching that
14 determination.

15 Q. Well, suppose you cannot determine the fair
16 date of entry under the litigation that didn't happen,
17 can you then turn around and use the Bresnahan rule
18 instead to determine anti-competitive effects?

19 A. Absolutely not. It's like saying I can't do
20 the right analysis, so I'll embrace a wrong and
21 dangerous analysis. That would be absolutely not the
22 right way to go for policy.

23 Q. Well, from the point of view of economists,
24 what's wrong with having a rule prohibiting patent
25 holders from offering net consideration?

1 A. From the point of economics, there's nothing
2 wrong with being permissive as a policy and as a legal
3 stance toward those parties, incumbents, patent
4 holders, to offering agreements that would contain
5 positive net consideration.

6 Q. And --

7 A. Those kinds of agreements may be essential to
8 break the logjam and to reach a socially beneficial
9 agreement that would settle an underlying patent
10 dispute.

11 Q. And if those were barred across the board, what
12 impact would it have on consumers?

13 A. If those were barred across the board, the
14 impact on consumers would often be negative, because
15 settlement agreements that were beneficial to consumers
16 would be cut off by such a bar.

17 Q. And what impact would that have on businessmen
18 if that was just flat barred?

19 A. A flat bar, because it would undermine the
20 ability of the parties to reach agreements that would
21 settle their patent litigation, would leave businesses
22 bearing undue risk and the costs of those risks that
23 could otherwise be avoided by finding an appropriate
24 pro-consumer settlement to their underlying patent
25 dispute.

1 Q. Are you familiar with the term "facially
2 anti-competitive"?

3 A. It sounds like a legal term.

4 Q. Well, let me give you a -- let me give you my
5 definition anyway. Something facially anti-competitive
6 is conduct that's difficult to comprehend as being
7 motivated by anything other than anti-competitive -- an
8 anti-competitive objective and is difficult to
9 comprehend as having anything other than an
10 anti-competitive effect, okay?

11 A. Okay.

12 Q. Okay. Is net consideration in a
13 patent-splitting agreement under that definition
14 facially anti-competitive?

15 A. No.

16 Q. From an economist's point of view, would there
17 be harm in presuming that net consideration was
18 anti-competitive?

19 A. Yes, for all the reasons that we've been
20 discussing here.

21 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: No further questions, Your
22 Honor.

23 MR. GIDLEY: No questions, Your Honor.

24 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Cross?

25 MS. CREIGHTON: Yes, Your Honor.

1 Your Honor, at some points I was hoping to be
2 able to use the nice charts that Schering has provided,
3 and I don't know what would be the best logistics so
4 that I'm not forcing Dr. Willig to have to turn around
5 all the time. Would it be better for me to place the
6 charts here or over there? I don't know if Dr. Willig
7 would be able to see them or you.

8 JUDGE CHAPPELL: The right side is probably
9 better, my right.

10 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor can see if it's
11 here?

12 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes. You don't need an easel.
13 You can move the entire apparatus there. Just watch
14 for all the cords on the floor.

15 MR. NIELDS: Is that visible or should we move
16 it this way?

17 JUDGE CHAPPELL: A little more. That's good.

18 MR. NIELDS: Still further?

19 JUDGE CHAPPELL: That's perfect for me.

20 MR. CURRAN: We'll be back here, Judge
21 Chappell.

22 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I see you back there, Mr.
23 Curran.

24 MS. CREIGHTON: Dr. Willig, will you be able to
25 read from there or not really?

1 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I can see under the exhibit.

2 THE WITNESS: If you make big gestures, then I
3 will probably be able to see what you're aiming at.

4 MS. CREIGHTON: What I was hoping to be able to
5 do is actually point out things on the chart to you
6 since it's hard to know sometimes where the arrows
7 begin and end. Would you be able to see if I'm
8 standing here --

9 THE WITNESS: I can see your hand.

10 MS. CREIGHTON: But you can't see the chart?

11 THE WITNESS: I can see the outlines of the
12 chart. It's not in sharp focus. We'll try.

13 MS. CREIGHTON: We can start and you can let me
14 know --

15 THE WITNESS: Absolutely, and if you'll permit
16 me to rise and get closer if I need to.

17 MS. CREIGHTON: Certainly, if the Court doesn't
18 mind.

19 CROSS EXAMINATION

20 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

21 Q. Good afternoon, Dr. Willig.

22 A. Good afternoon.

23 Q. Sir, you're not a lawyer, are you?

24 A. I'm not a lawyer.

25 Q. So, you've never tried a patent case, correct?

1 A. That is correct.

2 Q. And you've never been a judge, have you, sir?

3 A. No.

4 Q. You have never been a professional negotiator,
5 correct?

6 A. No, I haven't.

7 Q. Or a mediator?

8 A. Not outside the family.

9 Q. Have you ever published anything in the Journal
10 of Behavioral Decision Making?

11 A. No.

12 Q. Have you ever published anything in the
13 American Behavioral Scientist?

14 A. No, I haven't.

15 Q. Have you ever published anything in Negotiation
16 Journal?

17 A. No.

18 Q. Have you ever published anything in
19 Organizational Behavior in Human Decision Processes?

20 A. No.

21 Q. You were retained by Schering-Plough in this
22 case, correct?

23 A. Yes.

24 Q. And Schering did not ask you to express an
25 opinion on market power in this case, correct?

1 A. That is correct.

2 Q. Schering also didn't ask you to express an
3 opinion on market definition in the case?

4 A. Correct.

5 Q. Sir, you have not formed an opinion as to
6 whether the Schering-Upsher agreement is
7 pro-competitive or anti-competitive, correct?

8 A. Not based on the facts, but I have formed an
9 opinion, as I've been expressing all day, about the
10 methodology that Professor Bresnahan seems to utilize
11 to reach his opinions about those questions.

12 Q. But you haven't -- I'm sorry. But you haven't
13 looked at the facts in an attempt to reach a conclusion
14 about whether these agreements, in fact, are
15 anti-competitive or pro-competitive. Is that right?

16 A. That's correct.

17 Q. Similarly, with respect to the Schering-ESI
18 settlement, you haven't looked at the facts to reach a
19 conclusion with respect to whether that agreement is
20 pro-competitive or anti-competitive?

21 A. In the same sense of my last answer, yes.

22 Q. Okay. Schering also didn't ask you to express
23 an opinion as to whether early entry by a generic
24 competitor is good for consumers, correct? You've
25 assumed that for purposes of your analysis.

1 A. Yes, I think that's fair to say. I mean, my
2 models do assume it or they derive it from the
3 analytics that undergird these analyses. There are
4 other possible ways to understand the impact of generic
5 entry which might lead to a possibly different answer.
6 Those features are not in these models, and I have
7 assumed that these models are applicable in that
8 regard.

9 Q. Just for clarification, Dr. Willig, I'm showing
10 you what previously has been marked as Exhibit SPX 2065
11 and was a demonstrative in Dr. Addanki's testimony.
12 Can you read that if it's up on the computer, at least?
13 It's not so good on the far screen.

14 A. I'm beginning to wonder about my prescription.
15 I'm fuzzy at every distance. I can make it out.

16 Q. Okay. So, with respect to the first diamond,
17 you weren't asked to express an opinion, correct,
18 monopoly power?

19 A. I was not asked to investigate myself the issue
20 of monopoly power here, but rather, to assume it for
21 the sake of my analysis.

22 Q. And you were asked -- you were asked to express
23 an opinion about the methodology with respect to
24 whether -- what to do about delayed entry but not the
25 actual determination of whether the agreements are

1 early or late, correct?

2 A. I was certainly not asked to express an opinion
3 about the facts, about the timing of entry, but I
4 think, as you asked, about the methodology of how one
5 would make a determination of whether entry were
6 delayed or not relative to some potential benchmark.

7 Q. Okay. And then finally, you weren't asked to
8 express an opinion as to whether if there were delayed
9 entry whether consumers would be harmed, correct?

10 A. That's correct.

11 Q. Okay. Now, sir, you would not endorse a test
12 that required the fact finder to conclude that the
13 entrant would have to have won the patent case as a
14 condition for finding the settlement anti-competitive,
15 correct?

16 A. I'm having trouble sorting out the terminology
17 of your question.

18 Q. Okay. Suppose someone said the fact finder has
19 to conclude that the entrant would, in fact, have won
20 the patent case in order to make a showing that a
21 settlement agreement was anti-competitive, would you
22 agree with or disagree with such a test?

23 A. I think I would disagree with it if by that you
24 mean 100 percent chance that the entrant would win the
25 underlying patent litigation, and but for that, there

1 could be no anti-competitive element to the
2 arrangement?

3 Q. That's correct.

4 A. That would not be my view.

5 Q. And in fact, you would agree, wouldn't you,
6 that even if there were a 50/50 chance that the entrant
7 might have lost the case, it's still possible that
8 there could be an agreement that was anti-competitive
9 under those circumstances, correct?

10 A. Yes.

11 Q. And you would agree that a settlement agreement
12 can be anti-competitive even if it results in entry
13 before the end of a patent's nominal or legal life,
14 correct?

15 A. Yes.

16 Q. Okay. Now, I've just picked one of your charts
17 at random, so if there's another chart here that would
18 be better for laying some basic understanding I think
19 of features that are common to all of your charts here,
20 but if you can't read it, let me know and we can pick
21 another.

22 A. Thank you.

23 Q. We are currently looking at your chart labeled
24 Varied Assessments of Success, and at the -- there's a
25 box that says, "End of Patent Life," and by that,

1 you're not referring to the legal life of a patent,
2 correct, you're referring to the economic life of a
3 patent?

4 A. Actually, in this scenario, the end of the
5 patent life is the legal end of the applicability of
6 the patent, because here there's no other entry in this
7 scenario other than the possible entry of the
8 litigating entrant.

9 Q. In some of your models, are you assuming that
10 it's the economic life of the model rather than the
11 legal life of the model?

12 A. No, actually, I think in all of the
13 demonstratives that we looked at today, the end of the
14 patent life was intended to be the end of the legal
15 patent life. In the one case where there was a
16 third-party entrant arriving before the legal end of
17 the patent life, in that case the benefits to the
18 consumers and the impact on the incumbent and the
19 impact on the entrant past the time of the third-party
20 entry were all different. They were all affected by
21 the fact of the third-party entry, but nevertheless, in
22 that analysis, past the time of the third-party entry,
23 there still was an economic value, an economic impact
24 of the fact that the patent life remained. So, in all
25 of the analyses that I've spoken to today, the end of

1 the patent life is just that.

2 Q. Okay. More broadly, in the algebra that you
3 used in the models underlying these demonstratives, you
4 defined theta as the economic life of the patent, not
5 the legal life of the patent, correct?

6 A. I think that's probably right in terms of the
7 way I cast the algebra, yes.

8 Q. So, even if the specific examples you've given
9 here today on the demonstratives are the legal life of
10 the patent, in order to reach the general conclusions
11 you have in your algebra, you've been defining it by
12 the economic life of the patent, correct?

13 A. Uh-huh, and in the algebra and the description
14 of the algebra in the demonstratives, when I say the
15 end of the economic life of the patent, what I mean is
16 that events analyzed by the analytics have no
17 consequence past the time of theta, that they're --
18 because the patent life has reached its economic end,
19 whether it were to be affirmed or not or whether the
20 infringement issue went this way or that way has no
21 consequence on anybody's returns from this marketplace.
22 So, it's like the patent doesn't matter anymore after
23 that date.

24 Q. Let me show you page 6 of your report. It's
25 Exhibit CX 1717.

1 A. I'm sorry, do I get a real copy?

2 Q. Yes, oh.

3 May I approach, Your Honor?

4 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

5 THE WITNESS: Page 6?

6 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

7 Q. Yes, the second paragraph.

8 A. (Document review.)

9 Q. And here in your report you're setting up your
10 general analytics, and you state that you're defining
11 the patent's economic life, in the last sentence as,
12 "The patent's economic life will end when its legal
13 life expires, when a superior product comes to market,
14 or when (and if) demand for the product disappears for
15 some other reason."

16 Is that correct?

17 A. Right, all of which adds up to the patent no
18 longer matters after such a time.

19 Q. And so to determine the point at which that end
20 point is reached, you have to know three things that
21 you just identified in your report, correct? You have
22 to know the patent's legal life, whether and when a
23 superior product may come into the market, and when and
24 if demand for the product might otherwise disappear,
25 correct?

1 A. I think that's fair, if it's clear that those
2 other provisos are understood to be ones which would
3 make the patent irrelevant. It's got to be that
4 strong.

5 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, may I approach the
6 chart?

7 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, you may.

8 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

9 Q. Because, in fact, if the patent's economic life
10 is not here, if this is the legal life but the economic
11 life is here, that actually could change where the mean
12 probable date of entry under litigation is. Isn't that
13 right?

14 A. Well, actually, the entire diagram would move
15 to the left, as it were.

16 Q. That's right.

17 A. Yeah.

18 Q. But that could also affect whether these
19 settlements are aligned to the left or the right of
20 that line, correct?

21 A. Well, I think the -- you might want to move the
22 mean probable date of entry under litigation to the
23 left. Also, this would be a matter of one's analytic
24 inclination. You'd just move the whole diagram to the
25 left and understand that all of those indications are

1 defined relative to the time when the patent becomes
2 irrelevant, or not. I'm just keeping track of the
3 different phases of the analysis.

4 Q. But certainly to know where that line was, the
5 mean probable date of entry under litigation, you would
6 need to know the three facts that we just discussed
7 about where the patent's economic life ends, correct?

8 A. Well, if we move the entire diagram to the
9 left, if that's the way the analyst wishes to continue,
10 then the mean probable date of entry under litigation
11 should take into account -- if there were any
12 shortening of the economic life of the patent, that
13 would become the end of the applicable yellow stretch
14 of time, and the new mean probable date of entry would
15 be moved over correspondingly.

16 If, on the other hand, the analysis took that
17 period of time when the patent became irrelevant into
18 account but chose not to move the entire diagram to the
19 left, then we'd just adjust for it in some other
20 pertinent way.

21 Q. Well, all those adjustments wouldn't
22 necessarily be proportionate, would they?

23 A. If the entire diagram were moved to the left?
24 I think -- well, perhaps not, but I -- they might. I
25 don't see any reason why it wouldn't, frankly, as I sit

1 here, but I'm not staring at the algebra.

2 Q. Okay. Now, when you refer in your chart to net
3 consideration, that could come about through a side
4 agreement in which the parties don't make an even
5 exchange of fair market value as well as through a
6 settlement that transfers cash, correct?

7 A. Again, I'm not sure of the phraseology of your
8 question. Net consideration could be just, as far as
9 my model is concerned, a payment of cash with nothing
10 else going on on the side, or more realistically and
11 obviously with more complexity, it could be the payment
12 of cash or other value above the value that's received
13 in turn in the side deal.

14 Q. So, for purposes of determining the competitive
15 consequences of the settlement, it's not important in
16 your view for the -- whether the net consideration is
17 in the form of cash or in the form of value that
18 exceeds the value of what was returned, the way you've
19 just defined it, correct?

20 A. Well, obviously it matters in reality in terms
21 of what's in contention in a case like this. I
22 understand there's quite a bit of contention about
23 whether or not there is net consideration involved in
24 one of these agreements, and so it matters in that
25 respect, but in terms of my analytics, I'm just talking

1 about the size of the net consideration irrespective of
2 what form it takes.

3 Q. Now, in determining the mean date of entry
4 under litigation, you think that that should be
5 determined objectively rather than using the subjective
6 views of the parties, correct?

7 A. Well, my analysis takes the perspective of the
8 outside observer, the social scientist as it were,
9 asking the analytic question about whether or not the
10 so-called Bresnahan rule is a good methodology, and in
11 teeing up that question and in arriving at analytic
12 answers to it, the outside analyst has to have a view
13 of what the underlying truth is, and that's what the
14 bubble on the chart represents. It's the analyst's
15 benchmark for understanding what kinds of settlements
16 will be preferable for consumers to litigation and
17 which ones would not be.

18 Q. Well, isn't it true, sir, that you stated in
19 your report that the only reliable way to determine
20 whether a particular settlement is harmful to consumers
21 is to examine the specific features of that settlement
22 and, in particular, to determine if the date of
23 competitive entry called for by the settlement comes
24 before or after the mean date of entry under
25 litigation?

1 A. Yes, absolutely, from the consumer's
2 perspective.

3 Q. Okay. And so to do that, you need to know
4 where that mean probable date of entry under litigation
5 lies, correct?

6 A. In reality, going through a fact-finding
7 process, I think in particular it is important for the
8 fact finder to come to as good an understanding as
9 possible of the underlying strength of the patent
10 litigation.

11 Q. And to do that, it's your view that the fact
12 finder should use some objective odds that the fact
13 finder finds as opposed to some other method, correct?

14 A. Well, I think the appropriate way to proceed,
15 if I could just cast it broadly, is to make an
16 assessment based on expertise applied today but applied
17 to the information that would have been or was
18 reasonably available to the parties at the time that
19 they were undergoing the negotiations.

20 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, may I approach and
21 provide the witness a copy of his deposition?

22 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

23 THE WITNESS: Thank you. What page?

24 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

25 Q. Page 74.

1 A. Seven?

2 Q. Seventy-four, lines 8 to 12:

3 "QUESTION: But you would use an objective
4 assessment of the odds based on facts that the parties
5 knew at the time of settlement, correct?

6 "ANSWER: For the purpose of assessing the mean
7 litigation entry date, yes."

8 A. Yes.

9 Q. Did you give that answer and did I ask that
10 question?

11 A. Yes, and I think I just gave it to you now.

12 Q. Now, one of the reasons --

13 If I can approach the chart, Your Honor?

14 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, you may.

15 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

16 Q. One of the reasons you'd want to know the mean
17 date of entry under litigation is that when you were
18 talking about the payment of net consideration opening
19 up the possibilities for settlement, the possibilities
20 for settlement don't end at this line, do they?

21 A. They do not generally end at that line.

22 Q. In fact, in this chart, the payment of net
23 consideration would open up the possibility of
24 settlements ranging all the way from here to here,
25 correct?

1 A. That's quite possibly right.

2 Q. And as you testified I believe in direct,
3 settlements in this region would be good for consumers,
4 and settlements in this region would be bad for
5 consumers, correct?

6 A. Yes.

7 Q. And so in order to determine whether or not a
8 particular settlement was good or bad for consumers,
9 it's your testimony, isn't it, that it would be
10 important to know where this line was?

11 A. It might very well be the most pertinent of
12 evidence, yes.

13 Q. Just for purposes of terminology, generally,
14 can we refer to the region that you've marked in orange
15 maybe just as region A and then the region here from
16 the mean date of entry under litigation to the end of
17 the patent life as B, just to shorten things sometimes?

18 A. Well, you can use that, and I'll see if I
19 remember.

20 Q. All right. Let me show you page 10 of your
21 report, sir.

22 MR. NIELDS: Your Honor, I hate to interrupt,
23 but I think the transcript is silent on the question of
24 what sections of this line Ms. Creighton was pointing
25 to when she said A and B, and I think if she identifies

1 it in words, I think we'll all have a better chance of
2 knowing what's meant when she uses it.

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I was leaving it up to her to
4 make her record, Counselor.

5 MR. NIELDS: Maybe I should have done the same,
6 Your Honor.

7 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

8 Q. Dr. Willig, did you understand me when I was
9 talking about region A to be referring to the orange
10 region that's marked on your chart "Viable
11 Welfare-Enhancing Settlements With Net Consideration"?

12 A. I think I did understand that.

13 Q. And I was referring to region B as meaning the
14 region to the right of mean probable date of entry
15 under litigation but to the left of the end of patent
16 life. Did you understand that?

17 A. I think I did. Whether I can reliably remember
18 that or not is something else.

19 Q. Okay. Directing your attention to the second
20 paragraph of page 10 of your report, the -- in the
21 middle of the paragraph, you state, "The only reliable
22 way to determine if a particular settlement is harmful
23 to consumers is to examine the specific features of
24 that settlement, and, in particular to determine if the
25 date of competitive entry called for by the settlement

1 comes before or after the mean date of entry under
2 litigation."

3 Now, in order to perform that analysis, one of
4 the facts I think you would agree that you need to
5 determine under your test is an objective assessment of
6 the litigation odds, correct?

7 A. Let me just point out that I'm really not
8 advocating a particular test here. I never took this
9 to be my role in this case. It wasn't part of my
10 assignment. What's most important for me here is to
11 really stop the adoption of the Bresnahan rule, which I
12 regard as dangerous and unreliable for the reasons that
13 I explained in my report, in my deposition and in my
14 direct testimony.

15 I think in contrast to the Bresnahan rule,
16 there is only one reliable way that we know, and that's
17 to go right for an analysis of the settlement and to
18 ask the question about whether we can ascertain whether
19 or not there is consumer harm from the totality of the
20 settlement, and it is true that in particular, one
21 particularly relevant part of that assessment no doubt
22 comes down to attempting to assess the strength of the
23 underlying litigation, and as summarized in the way
24 we're speaking about it now, by the comparison between
25 the entry date under the settlement and the mean

1 probable date of entry under litigation from the
2 consumers' perspective, but I'm here to present a rule,
3 a test.

4 Q. So, you're not propounding that comparing the
5 mean date of entry under litigation with the settlement
6 date is necessarily a workable rule that a fact finder
7 could use. Is that correct?

8 A. Well, it might be a workable rule. It
9 certainly points to I think the need, once one
10 understands that the Bresnahan rule is too unreliable
11 to use, that one has to go directly to the facts about
12 whether or not the settlement actually is viewed as
13 harming consumers, rather than through an inappropriate
14 shortcut, and inevitably going to the truth about
15 comparing a settlement to litigation entails having a
16 sense of the underlying strength of that litigation,
17 which is what I'm expressing here and I've expressed
18 before, but that's not to say that I am turning to the
19 fact finder and saying, I have a Willig rule to replace
20 the Bresnahan rule. That's just not the case.

21 Q. Okay. Well, I'm trying to understand what it
22 is that you think, taking the long cut as opposed to
23 the shortcut which you think shouldn't be followed,
24 what are the factors or facts that a fact finder would
25 have to look at in order to determine whether a

1 settlement is pro-competitive or anti-competitive.

2 A. Yes.

3 Q. All right. And we've agreed that one of the
4 things that in your view you would look at is an
5 objective assessment of the litigation odds, correct?

6 A. Yes, remembering that it's an objective
7 assessment based on the information that would have
8 reasonably been available to the parties at the time
9 that they were undergoing their negotiations.

10 Q. And you would also need to know whether or not
11 there was going to be entry by a superior product prior
12 to the end of the patent's legal life, correct?

13 A. Well, as we've discussed, the patent life
14 reaches its economic end when the patent is irrelevant
15 to the marketplace, and that might happen short of the
16 end of the legal life of the patent should a
17 sufficiently superior product come along, but there's
18 no more demand for the products that we would otherwise
19 be talking about.

20 Q. And so you'd have to know whether or not there
21 might be some other factor that would intervene and cut
22 off demand for the product covered by that patent,
23 correct?

24 A. If it were to be the case that the fact finder
25 understood that in the back years of the legal life of

1 the patent, the patent would become irrelevant, then I
2 would think the fact finder should take that into
3 account.

4 Q. Okay. The fact finder would also want to take
5 into consideration in your view the time value of
6 money, correct?

7 A. Well, in my analysis, in my report, I show that
8 the time value of money can come into play as it's
9 experienced by the incumbent, the litigating entrant
10 and also consumers. I also point out that if it's
11 symmetric in the sense that all the parties have the
12 same time value of money, then, in fact, the analytics
13 essentially make the calculation of the time value of
14 money drop out of the central role of the analytic
15 comparisons.

16 However, if the time value of money is very
17 different, for example, as between the litigating
18 entrant and the incumbent as per the so-called
19 cash-strapped scenario, then that differential in the
20 time value of money actually plays a very important
21 role in understanding what might have been the
22 rationale for the side deal in its totality.

23 Q. And from the perspective of consumers, the
24 value in the early years might be quite different from
25 the value of the later years, correct?

1 A. Sure.

2 Q. You would also take into account the size of
3 the market over time, correct?

4 A. Yes, the larger is the market during various
5 phases, in particular with respect to the interaction
6 between the incumbent and the litigating entrant, then
7 that puts differential weights on those stretches of
8 time from the point of view of the impact of entry
9 dates on the impact on consumers.

10 Q. And in order to make a determination, you'd
11 also want to know when and whether the generic was
12 going to enter relative to the litigation that was
13 pending, correct?

14 A. I don't know what you mean.

15 Q. Well, for example, whether the generic could
16 enter during the pendency of the litigation.

17 A. The same generic who's litigating?

18 Q. Correct.

19 A. That might matter.

20 Q. It also might matter whether or not the generic
21 was able to enter even once the litigation was over,
22 for example, because of manufacturing or FDA approval
23 concerns?

24 A. Yes, absolutely, because that certainly might
25 affect, if it's important, what is the actual arrival

1 of meaningful entry from the consumer perspective under
2 the settlement as compared to the eventualities that
3 might occur under litigation.

4 Q. Now, if I understood you correctly, your
5 criticism of Professor Bresnahan's test is that you
6 think it could prevent settlements that would be
7 beneficial to consumers, correct?

8 A. I would go more broadly that Professor
9 Bresnahan's test poses the danger of stifling the
10 ability of the parties to reach settlements of
11 underlying patent disputes, and lots of different
12 categories of social harm I think follow from that, as
13 I discussed this morning. Yes, cutting off settlements
14 that might be favorable for consumers, but also, I
15 think it's a valid economic concern to understand that
16 the same misapplication of a bad rule would be chilling
17 the good effect of settlements on the parties, the
18 litigating parties, and also on the general judicial
19 system of our country, where it's important that
20 settlements that are appropriate be fostered, not
21 stifled.

22 Q. And if we could call up Exhibit SPX 2334.
23 Maybe I could just use the chart.

24 This is the demonstrative Entry by a Third
25 Party that you prepared, correct, Dr. Willig?

1 A. Yes.

2 Q. Now, you haven't done any empirical research
3 regarding how many settlements in the real world fall
4 within this model, correct?

5 A. You mean within the ambit of the settlements
6 involved in this case?

7 Q. Well, are you -- have you done any research as
8 to whether any cases in the real world actually fall
9 within all of the conditions that you've identified
10 within that model?

11 A. My understanding is that the specific portion
12 of this model that gives it its name, Entry by a Third
13 Party, that that's a factor of the marketplace that is
14 realistic frequently and certainly within the cases
15 that are at issue here.

16 Q. Okay, that wasn't quite my question, Dr.
17 Willig. It was whether -- my question is, have you
18 done any empirical research with respect to the number
19 of settlements that would satisfy all of the conditions
20 that are required to set up the conditions that you've
21 identified in SPX 2334?

22 A. Well, if you mean have I gone around doing a
23 count in a broader environment than just this case,
24 I've done no counting exercises; however, the
25 distinguishing feature of this analysis is entry by a

1 third party, and it's my general understanding that in
2 pharmaceutical markets generally, in markets in a
3 variety of industries where there are instances of
4 litigation and patent litigation and the possibility of
5 side deals with or without net consideration, that the
6 possibilities of entry by third parties to the core
7 patent litigations is commonplace.

8 Q. But entry by a third party is not the only
9 condition required to satisfy the model that you've
10 shown here, is it?

11 A. Well, I was wondering what else you had in mind
12 by your question.

13 Q. I'm talking about all of the other conditions
14 that are required to satisfy this chart.

15 A. Well, in this chart, there's actually no risk
16 aversion assumed, and as I explained in my direct
17 testimony, I actually think that's unrealistic, because
18 it's generally the case that risk aversion is
19 applicable in my view, but as I explained, this
20 particular analysis which leaves out risk aversion in
21 no way turns on whether or not there is risk aversion.
22 So, the purpose of this analysis was to demonstrate the
23 importance of the possibility of entry by a third party
24 called to the attention of our fact finders here that
25 under those generally important circumstances, it's

1 quite plausible that consumers would, in fact, be
2 benefitted by settlements even if the allowed entry
3 date under those settlements were to the later side of
4 the mean probable date of entry and to call to the fact
5 finder's attention in these cases as well as others
6 that it may very well be the case that net
7 consideration is vital in order for the parties to
8 reach any settlement at all, and in particular, that
9 payment of net consideration can enable the attainment
10 of a socially beneficial settlement, particularly of
11 benefit to consumers.

12 So, I think this is of importance quite
13 generally within the assumptions that it makes which I
14 think are generally relevant.

15 Q. Dr. Willig, you're not aware of any case, I
16 take it, in which in the real world entry by a third
17 party resulted in a gap between the generic and the
18 incumbent which by failure of their -- of net
19 consideration, they were unable to reach a settlement.
20 Is that correct?

21 A. I've actually not done a study that would have
22 enabled me to either find or not find a particular
23 instance of negotiation where there were an impasse
24 caused by the awareness of entry by a third party, but
25 nevertheless, my analysis, which is here to replace

1 Bresnahan's analysis, shows that the Bresnahan rule
2 derived from a framework without entry by a third party
3 is really dangerous because it reaches the wrong
4 general conclusion and is put forward by Professor
5 Bresnahan, as well as those relying on his analysis, as
6 being of general applicability rather than absolutely
7 wrong in instances that themselves are based on
8 generally applicable factors.

9 Q. Dr. Willig, doesn't your model in SPX 2334, in
10 fact, show that a comparison of the mean probable date
11 of entry under litigation to the settlement date would
12 be subject to exactly the same criticism that you
13 leveled at the Bresnahan rule?

14 A. How so?

15 Q. Well, isn't it the case, sir, I think as you
16 pointed out in your direct, that there are settlements
17 that you would consider to be pro-consumer that would
18 be precluded by a test that compared the settlement
19 date with the mean date of entry under litigation?

20 A. I think maybe you're characterizing my position
21 wrongly or maybe you don't intend to characterize my
22 position. What I was trying to say -- and see if I'm
23 being responsive, please -- is that in this
24 circumstance, and this is an example of the analytics,
25 consumers would prefer settlements with entry dates

1 that go to the right-hand side of the arrow below the
2 consumer box, which goes to the later side of the mean
3 probable date of entry under litigation, and that some
4 of those can be supported by the passage of net
5 consideration, as could some settlements to the early
6 side of the mean probable date of entry, and a rule
7 against net consideration would cut off those
8 settlements, but permissiveness toward the passage of
9 net consideration would enable those settlements to be
10 reached. It wouldn't stop them from being reached.

11 Q. Well, just to make sure we're understanding
12 each other, Dr. Willig, in your report on page 10, you
13 had said the only reliable way to determine if a
14 particular settlement is harmful to consumers is to
15 examine the specific features of that settlement and,
16 in particular to determine if the date of competitive
17 entry called for by the settlement comes before or
18 after the mean date of entry under litigation.

19 That analysis, as I think you've shown here in
20 your chart, would, in fact, preclude settlements to the
21 right of the mean probable date of entry under
22 litigation that you had described as pro-consumer,
23 correct?

24 A. Oh, I see what you're saying now, Ms.
25 Creighton. Thank you.

1 Q. So, to the extent that you have stated a test
2 that you think would be applicable --

3 A. Um-hum.

4 Q. -- that test would fail under this model,
5 correct?

6 A. I understand your question now, and let me
7 explain. This is the one model where the impact on
8 consumers is really more complex than the arrival of
9 the entry date is in all of the other models that are
10 worked through in the paper and demonstrated in the
11 charts. In this model, when the consumer surplus
12 impact on consumers is fully worked through, then, in
13 fact, we get the result that's shown here that
14 consumers can actually prefer settlements on the later
15 side of the mean probable date of entry to litigation,
16 and that comes out of the analysis of the impact on
17 consumers through appropriate professional economic
18 tools -- namely, consumer surplus -- and that's done in
19 the analytics that are now, I hope, part of the record.

20 It's not exactly the same thing as the
21 statistical mean probability -- mean probable date of
22 entry under litigation, but if one goes to the consumer
23 perspective and adjudges different dates of entry from
24 the point of view of their impact on consumer surplus,
25 which is the consumer perspective, then uses the

1 litigation probabilities, one attains the correct
2 result.

3 Q. So, Dr. Willig, isn't it the case that to the
4 extent that SPX 2334 could be viewed as a critique of
5 Professor Bresnahan's test, it equally is proof that
6 the test of comparing the mean entry date under
7 litigation and the settlement date is not a sufficient
8 test as well?

9 A. No, absolutely not. This analysis shows that
10 in some circumstances in particular where there's entry
11 by a third party, it's very important to assess the
12 mean probable date of entry directly from the consumer
13 perspective, which is to understand, for example, here
14 that in the right-most, the end-most period of time
15 within the patent life whether or not there are three
16 players in the market, both the entering third party,
17 the litigating entrant and the incumbent is of special
18 concern to consumers, because in this analysis, when
19 there are three, the price falls to a dramatically
20 competitive level.

21 So, from the point of view of the consumer
22 perspective, that's a particularly important stretch of
23 time for the consumers to have availability of three
24 competing sellers of the product, whereas in the
25 earlier part, the issue was only whether there's one or

1 two, and that has a smaller impact on the consumer.
2 So, when the consumer perspective is adopted as the
3 applicable one, and that's what I keep trying to remind
4 myself and you and the record, then, in fact, this
5 analysis gives exactly the right answer from the point
6 of view of consumers.

7 Q. Dr. Willig, in performing your analysis in this
8 case, did you look for other circumstances in which
9 there would be settlements that might be beneficial in
10 your view to consumers that also would fall to the
11 right, that is, later than the mean probable date of
12 entry under litigation?

13 A. I don't know that I explicitly looked for them,
14 but I think every time I did one of these analyses, a
15 part of it was to understand the reservation date for
16 consumers, and I think it's fair to say that every time
17 we've seen a chart that showed that the reservation
18 time for consumers was the mean probable date of entry,
19 that that's the way the math came out.

20 Q. So, so far as you're aware, there could be
21 other analyses that would show that even settlements
22 later than the mean date of entry under litigation
23 might be viewed as pro-consumer by your definition?

24 A. Well, I think the right way to go about the
25 analysis is to take the consumer perspective and to ask

1 the question using the likelihoods of the underlying
2 patent litigation going one way or the other way, hence
3 the phrase "mean probable," that when those
4 probabilities are applied to the consumer surplus
5 measure, which accurately reflects the consumer
6 perspective, which is the way I proceeded in all of my
7 analyses, then one gets to the right answer.

8 Q. All right. Now, Dr. Willig, to find the range
9 that you have on SPX 2334, you've made certain
10 assumptions regarding where the line that is labeled
11 "Consumers Who Expect Further Entry Prefer These
12 Settlements to Litigation," that line doesn't
13 necessarily have to be to the right of the mean
14 probable date of entry under litigation under your
15 algebra, does it?

16 A. No, actually, it doesn't have to. As I
17 remember the analytics, there is an algebraic condition
18 which governs whether or not the consumer arrow goes to
19 the right of the mean probable date of entry under
20 litigation, and under some algebraic circumstances it
21 does, and under other algebraic circumstances it does
22 not.

23 Q. Okay. And it's correct, isn't it, that in
24 determining where the -- how far that consumer
25 preference line falls, you would need to know some

1 additional factors, such as the total monopoly profit
2 and total monopoly dead weight loss, total duopoly
3 profit and total duopoly dead weight loss. Is that
4 correct?

5 A. As I recall it -- I'm relying on memory here --
6 I think those algebraic representations do come into
7 play in the analytics of where the consumer reservation
8 date lies relative to the mean probable date of entry.

9 Q. Okay. So, to determine in SPX 2334 whether or
10 not settlements are -- enhance consumer welfare or not,
11 you would also need to know all of those factors,
12 correct?

13 A. I'm sorry, could you repeat the question?

14 Q. Well, to determine under the circumstances
15 shown in your chart, Entry by a Third Party, SPX 2334,
16 you would need to know all of those additional factors,
17 correct? You would need to know the monopoly and
18 duopoly profit and dead weight loss?

19 A. Well, within the model -- let's see if this is
20 responsive -- it is true that one could not tell
21 quantitatively, algebraically where the ends of the
22 arrow would lie within the model unless one had a
23 quantification of the symbols in the model, but the
24 purpose of putting this up and the purpose of doing the
25 analysis is not to suggest that the fact finder should

1 somehow replicate my algebra with actual real world
2 numbers.

3 The point of this analysis is to point out to
4 the fact finder the importance of the factor entry by a
5 third party and how that factor, among many others, all
6 add up to the absolute unreliability and the danger of
7 using the shortcut of just ascertaining whether or not
8 there is positive net consideration.

9 Q. Well, but unless you figure out those factors,
10 you don't know, do you, sir, whether or not the
11 settlements, in fact, even if you calculated the mean
12 probable date of entry under litigation, whether they
13 are pro-competitive or whether they fall to the right
14 and are anti-competitive, correct?

15 A. Well, in this case, if indeed the end of the
16 consumer arrow is to the right, then just using the
17 statistical mean probable date of entry under
18 litigation, which is not the consumer perspective but a
19 statistician's perspective, is conservative from the
20 point of view of protecting consumers, but still, if
21 one were to try to replicate what the chart displays in
22 a sharp way would require some sort of quantification,
23 which it is not my testimony is what the fact finder
24 ought to be doing.

25 Q. But unless you do that calculation, isn't it

1 true, sir, that you would be potentially chilling
2 pro-consumer settlements, just the same way as you've
3 criticized Professor Bresnahan?

4 A. See, I don't see how that follows at all.
5 Being permissive about net consideration doesn't
6 necessarily drive the settlement that would be expected
7 under that context to be in any particular right-most
8 part of the orange bracket, if that's what you're
9 somehow assuming by your question.

10 Q. No, I don't think I was assuming anything of
11 the kind, sir.

12 If I can approach the chart again?

13 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, you may.

14 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

15 Q. In order -- since we -- calculating the mean
16 probable date of entry under litigation in this
17 instance doesn't tell us whether a settlement is
18 pro-competitive or anti-competitive, correct, because
19 there could be settlements even to the late side of
20 that line that under your diagram would be good for
21 consumers, correct?

22 A. Right, and remember, the reason is that from
23 the consumer perspective, the impact on consumers of
24 the entry date of the litigating entrant actually
25 changes depending upon its relationship to the time of

1 entry by the third party.

2 Q. Correct, but to know whether or not a
3 settlement lies in the range that you've highlighted in
4 orange or whether it lies to the right of that line and
5 is not welfare-enhancing, you would have to know where
6 the consumer expectation line ends, correct?

7 A. If one were trying to make that sharp a
8 distinction as a process of law enforcement, then that
9 would be so, but I'm not here to advocate that a fact
10 finder be held to the task of literally quantifying
11 this diagram and somehow using it within that format.

12 Q. Okay. So, you don't think a fact finder should
13 be held to the standard of having to include any
14 possibility that a particular rule would foreclose
15 potential pro-consumer settlements. Is that correct?

16 A. No, I think that the right attitude for the
17 fact finder is to avoid shortcuts where they're
18 unreliable and dangerous and instead to employ best
19 evidence on the subject of the impact on consumers of
20 the settlement that's being scrutinized.

21 Q. Now, Doctor, we've been assuming for these
22 purposes that the consumer expectation line will end to
23 the right of the mean entry date under litigation, but
24 your algebra doesn't compel that answer, does it? In
25 fact, the consumer litigation line or preference line

1 could end short of the mean entry date under
2 litigation. Isn't that correct?

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Hang on, Counselor. You asked
4 him two questions.

5 MS. CREIGHTON: I'm sorry.

6 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Let's go one at a time.

7 MS. CREIGHTON: I was attempting by the second
8 to explain the first.

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Susanne, read back the first
10 question, please.

11 (The record was read as follows:)

12 "QUESTION: Now, Doctor, we've been assuming
13 for these purposes that the consumer expectation line
14 will end to the right of the mean entry date under
15 litigation, but your algebra doesn't compel that
16 answer, does it?"

17 THE WITNESS: No.

18 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

19 Q. And in fact, depending on the relationship
20 between monopoly and duopoly profit and dead weight
21 loss, the consumer preference line, in fact, could fall
22 short of the mean date of entry under litigation,
23 correct?

24 A. Yeah, this is the kind of case where using the
25 statistical mean from the point of view of the

1 nameless, faceless statistician doesn't accurately
2 reflect the consumer perspective, because the different
3 stretches of time before and after the arrival of the
4 third-party entrant have different impacts on the
5 consumer, and as a result, taking the consumer
6 perspective and looking at the mean probable date from
7 the consumer perspective gives one answers that are
8 different than what the statistician would label as the
9 mean probable date of entry, which is what that bubble
10 is pointing to on the chart.

11 Q. Okay. So, in the case where the consumer
12 preference line ends at a date earlier than the mean
13 date of entry under litigation, it would be possible
14 for the parties to enter into settlements that were
15 earlier than the mean date of entry under litigation,
16 but, in fact, reduced consumer welfare. Isn't that
17 correct?

18 A. Well, that wouldn't be so if the mean probable
19 date of entry under litigation were construed from the
20 consumer perspective, then that concept would coincide
21 with the consumer's reservation date.

22 Q. But if mean probable date of entry under
23 litigation were defined as you defined it in your
24 report, that would be so, wouldn't it?

25 A. In my report, I include the consumer surplus

1 probability calculations of the very kind that underlie
2 this discussion. So, my report is using the consumer
3 perspective reliably in the analytics.

4 Q. Isn't it the case, sir, that calculating the
5 mean date of entry under litigation the way we were
6 describing, where you would look at the objective odds,
7 the economic life of the patent, the shape and life of
8 the market, all of those things this example shows
9 wouldn't tell you whether a settlement that was either
10 before or after that date was good for consumers,
11 correct?

12 A. No, that's not correct, because the arrival of
13 the third-party entrant is one of those features like
14 the shape and size of the market, it's in that same
15 category, that changes the consumer perspective and
16 makes it different from the statistician's perspective
17 on what is the mean probable date. Different stretches
18 of time take on different significance from the
19 consumer's perspective because of the entry of the
20 third party.

21 Q. Okay. Well, if you're going to redefine the
22 mean probable date of entry under litigation to include
23 the consumer perspective, then you are going to need to
24 know all those factors we just talked about about
25 duopoly profit and dead weight loss, monopoly profit

1 and dead weight loss, correct?

2 A. Well, one would need to take into account in
3 whatever is the applicable fashion the way that these
4 factors bear on the welfare of consumers, and if one
5 has the appropriate target, namely, impact on consumer
6 welfare, which is the right standard, although
7 sometimes a challenging one to meet, under that
8 standard, where these factors are important and change
9 the consumer perspective in the sense of making it
10 different from the statistician's perspective, it's the
11 consumer's perspective that is the relevant one for
12 judging competitiveness.

13 Q. Now, sir, you would agree, wouldn't you, that
14 the overwhelming percentage of cases settle?

15 A. In general, I think that's right.

16 Q. And that's true of all types of disputes,
17 including patent disputes, correct?

18 A. I imagine that's true, but I'm not -- I'm not
19 really sharply a student of those numbers.

20 Q. Well, if I told you that there was testimony a
21 few days ago from one witness that he had a database in
22 which 45 of 50 patent cases settled, would you have any
23 reason to think that those numbers are way off, based
24 on your understanding?

25 A. I'm sorry, what did you did say, 50 cases

1 settled?

2 Q. Forty-five out of 50 cases settled.

3 A. Oh, I see. That doesn't surprise me.

4 Q. Now, considering the consumer welfare of either
5 a test that looks at the mean entry date under
6 litigation or some other test, it would be appropriate
7 to look not only at the effect of that rule on cases
8 that don't settle but also potentially on cases that
9 do, correct?

10 A. Yes, I would say that's fair.

11 Q. And when you were advocating in your report
12 that the only way to determine whether a settlement is
13 good for consumers or not was to compare the mean entry
14 date under litigation with the settlement date, you
15 weren't imposing a screen that would only apply that
16 analysis to cases where there otherwise wouldn't be a
17 settlement, correct?

18 A. I'm confused by your question. I think I
19 explained this morning that there are two applicable
20 standards of comparison that arise from my analysis.
21 One is litigation, as the alternative to a particular
22 settlement that's being analyzed, and the other might
23 be an alternative settlement if there were direct
24 evidence of the practicality of some alternative
25 settlement for the purpose of the comparison from the

1 consumer perspective.

2 Q. Let me ask the question this way, Doctor: In
3 the 45 cases out of 50 that settled, hypothetically,
4 would you allow the payment of net consideration so
5 long as the settlement date was short of the mean
6 probable date of entry under litigation?

7 A. I'm not here to offer a rule, but I am here to
8 say that I think it would be generally a bad idea,
9 dangerous, to adopt a rule against net consideration as
10 applied to all 50 of those cases that you're
11 mentioning.

12 Q. Okay. Now, in your expert report, in your
13 testimony today, you focused on the benefit of a rule
14 with respect to its effect on permitting settlements in
15 the five cases out of 50, correct, the cases that
16 wouldn't settle otherwise?

17 A. The cases that wouldn't settle otherwise? That
18 question in a way presumes that I have information or a
19 view on whether the 45 cases that settled involved some
20 form of net consideration or side deal or not, and I'm
21 just not apprised of that.

22 Q. Okay, I thought I heard you say in your direct
23 testimony that you thought it would be a mistake to
24 prohibit patent splits with net consideration because
25 those payments might very well be essential to the

1 settlement, correct?

2 A. Yes, to good settlements, um-hum.

3 Q. And you were focused, weren't you, principally
4 on the effect of a rule on those cases where net
5 consideration might otherwise be essential for
6 settlement, correct?

7 A. That is what I was able to show, which to me
8 totally overturns the analysis put forward by Professor
9 Bresnahan in support of the so-called Bresnahan rule,
10 as well as reliance on that rule by complaint counsel
11 to the extent that complaint counsel is so relying.

12 Q. Did you consider what effect your rule of
13 allowing net consideration would have on cases in which
14 settlements otherwise would occur?

15 A. I understand that changing the rules would have
16 an impact both on cases that would otherwise not settle
17 at all or find some other settlement as well as cases
18 that would find settlement, but I think in this totally
19 unsettled area, the harm that is clearly identified
20 here from a rule that is dangerous within its own four
21 corners, having identified those dangers, we as a
22 policy community should pay attention to that.

23 Q. Okay, but would you agree that if a rule
24 resulted in settlements that lower consumer welfare in
25 the majority of cases that would otherwise settle, that

1 that would be something that a policy maker would want
2 to take into consideration?

3 A. Well, yes, I think in general when economists
4 think about per se rules or inflexible general rules,
5 economists do think about this from the decision-making
6 point of view of public policy. We understand that one
7 should be thinking through a balance between what we
8 call type one and type two errors, errors of omission
9 and commission, and we also understand that as a
10 general framework for such analyses that it's only on
11 the basis of a great deal of experience pointing toward
12 a conclusion that an inflexible or a per se rule would
13 generally improve things and hardly ever harm things,
14 and then it might follow that a per se or an inflexible
15 rule would be warranted.

16 What worries me here is that Professor
17 Bresnahan, perhaps complaint counsel, puts forward a
18 new, very inflexible, nearly per se rule without there
19 being a great deal of experience about it, hardly any I
20 would say, and with there being now, due to my own work
21 and the understanding of others, that there's a very
22 serious potential downside from this rule.

23 Q. Dr. Willig, wouldn't you agree that if there is
24 an adverse effect on consumer welfare from a rule that
25 allows net consideration on the majority of cases, that

1 that would be something that would be -- you would want
2 to point out in your report or your testimony?

3 A. I think if I knew on the basis of experience
4 that the harms that I had identified were likely to be
5 overwhelmed by opposite impacts on the other side, and
6 if I knew that based on sufficient experience, I would
7 be offering a different conclusion.

8 Q. Okay. Well, isn't it true, Dr. Willig, that
9 your report is entirely silent with respect to the
10 effects of a rule that allows net consideration,
11 harmful or otherwise, on cases that otherwise would
12 settle?

13 A. No, it's true that I myself am aware of the
14 newness of the inquiry and the novelty of the questions
15 here that are posed. I'm aware also of the absence of
16 experience on the part of the policy community, courts,
17 the agency, economists who think about these things,
18 and that we are way, way short of the kind of
19 experience and the kind of knowledge of the balance of
20 harms and benefits that would ordinarily suggest that
21 it was appropriate to adopt a new inflexible, nearly
22 per se rule of the kind that Professor Bresnahan is
23 putting forward here.

24 Q. One important part of Professor Bresnahan's
25 analysis relates to the incentives of the parties if

1 payment of net consideration is permitted, correct?

2 A. Yes.

3 Q. And yet you didn't think it appropriate to
4 address the effect of that incentive on the majority of
5 cases that would settle without the payment of net
6 consideration, correct?

7 A. No, I'm well aware, and it shows up in my own
8 analytics, that there are opportunities for the parties
9 to employ net consideration in a way that would push
10 the applicable entry date to the right-hand side of the
11 area where consumers benefit and that it might, in
12 fact, be profitable for the negotiating parties to move
13 their deal in that direction if there were no reason
14 for them to experience any breaking forces in the
15 opposite direction. I think I covered in my report
16 that the understanding of antitrust and of the need to
17 be cautious about the use of net consideration, in part
18 because of legal considerations, is a contrary force
19 that can be expected to stop parties from just running
20 willy-nilly in the anti-competitive direction with the
21 use of net consideration.

22 Q. Dr. Willig, Professor Bresnahan isn't the only
23 economist involved in this case who has thought that it
24 was possible not to have to do a comparison of the mean
25 data of entry under litigation with the settlement,

1 correct?

2 A. I'm not sure who you're referring to.

3 Q. Let me show you what's been marked as CX 708.

4 It's a report of Carl Shapiro.

5 If I may approach, Your Honor?

6 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

7 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, would you like a

8 copy?

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Are you going to put it on the
10 ELMO?

11 MS. CREIGHTON: Yes.

12 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I don't need it, thank you.

13 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

14 Q. Dr. Willig, this is one of the documents that
15 you reviewed in connection with preparing your expert
16 report, correct?

17 A. I believe that's right.

18 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Objection, Your Honor, as to
19 the use of this report. I was not allowed to use Mr.
20 Fliesler's deposition. Mr. Shapiro -- Carl Shapiro is
21 not testifying here. I don't see why -- why complaint
22 counsel should be able to use this report.

23 MS. CREIGHTON: I'm using it, Your Honor, to
24 confront the expert and probe the scope of his
25 testimony with respect to the only reliable way to

1 analyze these settlements is the way that he's
2 identified, and I want to probe that by confronting him
3 with the opinion of another expert, which is one of the
4 documents that he reviewed and identified in his expert
5 report as a basis for his opinion.

6 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Is this a document he
7 considered and relied upon in forming his opinion?

8 MS. CREIGHTON: Yes.

9 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: No, he reviewed --

10 MS. CREIGHTON: I'm sorry, well, he listed it
11 as a document he reviewed. I'm not offering -- I'm not
12 offering it into evidence, Your Honor. I'm just
13 seeking to use statements that were in this report
14 which he has reviewed and is familiar with and confront
15 him with it and see what he says about the limits of
16 his analysis.

17 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: And I -- it seems to me to be
18 the exact same context as the deposition of Mr.
19 Fliesler, which I was not allowed to use.

20 MS. CREIGHTON: But I'm -- I beg to differ,
21 Your Honor. He was seeking to introduce the statement
22 of Mr. Fliesler to have him adopt it and sort of
23 endorse it. I'm using this to confront the witness. I
24 have been informed that -- I was not here in court --
25 that this exact document was used in cross examination

1 with Professor Bresnahan.

2 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Right now I'll sustain the
3 objection until I hear a better foundation.

4 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

5 Q. Dr. Willig, have you seen this document before?

6 A. I believe I did see it before, yes.

7 Q. And let me show you attachment 1 to your
8 report.

9 If I might approach, Your Honor?

10 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

11 MR. GIDLEY: Susan, could I get a copy?

12 MS. CREIGHTON: Oh, I'm sorry.

13 MR. GIDLEY: I'm a little bit more hidden than
14 usual today. Thank you very much.

15 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

16 Q. That copy's a little obscured here, but it is
17 Exhibit CX 708, the same as the document you
18 identified -- strike that.

19 Attachment 1, can you please identify it, Dr.
20 Willig?

21 A. Oh, attachment 1 was an attachment to my report
22 listing materials considered.

23 Q. All right. And listed on attachment 1 is,
24 "Economic Analysis of the Key-ESI Patent Settlement by
25 Carl Shapiro, March 20, 2001."

1 Do you see that?

2 A. Yes, I do.

3 Q. Is that the same as the document I've handed
4 you that's marked CX 708?

5 A. As far as I can tell by a quick look, yes.

6 Q. So, is this report something that you
7 considered in connection with preparing your report in
8 this case?

9 A. The word "considered" is -- I certainly
10 reviewed it.

11 Q. All right.

12 A. I read it at one time.

13 Q. At the top of Attachment 1, it says, "Materials
14 Considered." Was this, in fact, considered by you in
15 connection with preparing your report?

16 A. Well, in the sense of "reviewed," yes. The
17 other word that you used, if I may add, "relied upon,"
18 absolutely not.

19 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, I would like the
20 opportunity to confront this witness with this
21 document.

22 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: I renew my objection, Your
23 Honor.

24 JUDGE CHAPPELL: If he's got it listed on
25 Attachment 1, Materials Considered, I'm going to allow

1 her to question him. You can object if you hear a
2 question you don't like.

3 Go ahead.

4 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

5 Q. Dr. Willig, did you review this report?

6 A. I did.

7 Q. Was it your understanding that when it says,
8 "Economic Analysis of the Key/ESI Patent Settlement,"
9 that that was a reference to the Schering-ESI patent
10 settlement that's at issue in this case?

11 A. Yes.

12 Q. And Carl Shapiro is a professor of economics at
13 the University of California, correct?

14 A. I'm not sure that's his title, but I know he's
15 at the University of California, Berkeley, he teaches
16 in the business school, so he may have a different
17 title, but --

18 Q. All right, okay. And a few years ago he was
19 the chief economist for the Antitrust Division of the
20 Department of Justice, correct?

21 A. Yes, he was.

22 Q. Directing your attention to the footnote, which
23 may be very hard to read here, but I'll read it --

24 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Counsel, I am going to allow
25 you to test his data and underlying assumptions but not

1 to force this other expert's opinion into evidence.

2 MS. CREIGHTON: Yes, Your Honor.

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Just so we're clear.

4 MS. CREIGHTON: Yes, Your Honor, I just want to
5 identify who he understood this to be coming from.

6 This is the last question along these lines.

7 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

8 Q. The footnote says, "This paper was prepared for
9 the Federal Trade Commission on behalf of ESI Lederle,
10 Inc."

11 Was it your understanding that this was
12 prepared in that connection?

13 A. That doesn't surprise me, but I wouldn't
14 necessarily have known that.

15 Q. Okay. It was your understanding that Professor
16 Shapiro offered an analysis different from the one you
17 provided in your testimony here today, correct?

18 A. Well, it is different in the sense -- in many
19 senses, but, for example, you directed me to that first
20 footnote. Right below it is another footnote that in
21 some sense immediately separates what Professor Shapiro
22 did for his analysis from what I did with mine. The
23 footnote says that -- this is Professor Shapiro
24 speaking, "My analysis below does not include some of
25 the benefits that result from settlements; the

1 resolution of uncertainty (I assume the parties are
2 both risk neutral, not risk averse) and the benefits to
3 the court system from settlement, including both the
4 direct costs of operating the court system and the
5 benefits from relieving congestion in the courts.
6 Inclusion of these benefits, which clearly factor into
7 any evaluation of public interest, are beyond the scope
8 of my analysis."

9 So, evidently the scope of his analysis was
10 quite different than the scope of my analysis.

11 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Let me clarify something on
12 the record.

13 Would you stand up, please, sir?

14 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Yes, sir.

15 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Something I think you failed
16 to mention earlier. There is a substantive difference
17 in trying to bolster your expert's opinion on direct
18 examination and someone cross examining someone else's
19 expert with a document, just so we understand that.

20 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Yes, sir.

21 JUDGE CHAPPELL: That's the basis of my ruling.

22 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Okay.

23 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you.

24 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

25 Q. Professor Shapiro, in fact, looks at a

1 comparison of the settlement entry date and the date of
2 entry under litigation, correct? Is that your
3 understanding?

4 A. Well, I first reviewed this some time ago, and
5 I did not review it just now sufficiently, but as I was
6 just flipping through it to see if I recognized it, it
7 seems that right up on the second page, Section A is
8 called Patent Strength, and he seems to be saying, and
9 I quote, "To assess what consumer welfare would have
10 been under ongoing litigation inevitably requires some
11 estimation of the likelihood that the patent would have
12 been found valid, enforceable and infringed by the
13 other party to the settlement. I call this likelihood
14 patent strength, ranging from zero, worthless, to 100
15 percent, ironclad," and he goes on to say, paraphrasing
16 the next few sentences, patent strength may be
17 difficult to assess, but there's no getting around the
18 need to do so in order coherently to evaluate the
19 antitrust implications of settlements. So, in that
20 respect, we're not that far apart.

21 Q. I think that was the part I was referring to,
22 but then he goes on, and I would like to direct your
23 attention to page 5 of the report, where he develops
24 his consistency check, and in particular, the third
25 paragraph. It states:

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 "There is a genuine consistency check on the
2 Key side."

3 That would be the Schering side?

4 A. Uh-huh.

5 Q. "One can reasonably ask why Key would agree to
6 let ESI into the market after only 40% of the relevant
7 time period, if Key indeed believed its patent to be
8 nearly ironclad. The Appendix develops this
9 consistency test. Basically, the test boils down to
10 the following common-sense question: Did the patent
11 holder on net pay more to the challenger than it would
12 have incurred in litigation costs had the two parties
13 litigated rather than settled? If the patent holder
14 believed it was giving up more in value than it was
15 saving in litigation costs, one can reasonably infer
16 that the patentee was getting something else out of the
17 settlement, namely a later expected entry time than
18 would have arisen from litigation."

19 Do you agree with Professor Shapiro's
20 consistency check?

21 A. No, as you could predict, absolutely not. His
22 so-called consistency check, to the extent it's founded
23 in an analysis, it's clear from that earlier footnote
24 that I just read to you that part of what he is
25 assuming away that causes him to reach this particular

1 part of his conclusion is risk aversion as well as the
2 other benefits of settlement to society.

3 He also does not consider the case of pessimism
4 on the part of the incumbent, nor the case of
5 third-party entry, all of those being circumstances
6 which I analyzed in my far broader work and all of
7 which show the inapplicability of his conclusion in
8 only a slightly broader framework.

9 Q. All right. Well, Dr. Willig, would it be fair
10 to say, then, in circumstances where there was no
11 finding of risk aversion or third-party entry or
12 pessimism, that Professor Shapiro's test would be an
13 appropriate one?

14 A. No, not at all. It's not a question of whether
15 there's a finding of risk aversion and the other things
16 that you mentioned. I think Professor Shapiro is
17 perfectly clear even from his point of view that he's
18 assuming away something which might ordinarily be
19 presumed. He just chooses not to include it for
20 whatever reason.

21 He also doesn't consider either via footnote or
22 by inclusion the idea of pessimism, which as we've
23 discussed shows up in Professor Bresnahan's report, not
24 analyzed, but at least accepted as a possibility that
25 might be but is not considered, and it doesn't show up

1 in this paper as being considered at all, as well, and
2 the same applies to third-party entry.

3 Q. Well, suppose that one were to adopt something
4 like the Shapiro rule as a presumption and then say if
5 somebody could come in and prove, well, this rule isn't
6 a good one, because, in fact, there's entry by a third
7 party or there's relative pessimism, what would be your
8 opinion of that rule?

9 A. I still think that's a dangerous rule. It puts
10 the burden on the wrong party. If one imagines a party
11 to a patent litigation trying to reach a settlement
12 finding that there is an impasse and then considering
13 the possibility of a side deal linked to the settlement
14 of the patent dispute, and all of a sudden being
15 advised by counsel, well, since the presumption goes
16 against risk aversion under, say, the proposed FTC
17 version of Professor Bresnahan or Professor Shapiro, so
18 you have to act here as if you don't mind risk.

19 Now, can you still settle the case under the
20 proviso that you need to demonstrate somehow your risk
21 aversion? Otherwise, you're in legal trouble. That
22 seems to me a kind of legal posture that would be
23 dangerously chilling of the settlement process and
24 thereby lead to the kind of danger that I discussed in
25 my direct of cutting off the possibility of reaching

1 socially advantageous settlements.

2 Q. Okay. So, your testimony, Dr. Willig, is that
3 you would apply a test of the presumption of legality
4 to the payment of net consideration?

5 A. Not at all, absolutely not, I did not say that.
6 I think the correct presumption is that risk aversion
7 is part of the environment in the context of
8 negotiations to settle underlying litigation, where
9 it's well understood that one of the main reasons that
10 parties attempt to settle litigation is to get rid of
11 the risk that otherwise imposes costs on them.

12 Q. Dr. Willig, Janusz Ordover is an economist that
13 was designated but has not been called by Upsher in
14 this case. Is that correct?

15 A. He is an economist. I don't know his status
16 with Upsher.

17 Q. He is someone with whom you've co-authored
18 articles?

19 A. Absolutely.

20 Q. He is a professor of economics at NYU, correct?

21 A. Yes, he is.

22 Q. He was also chief economist for the Antitrust
23 Division some years ago, correct?

24 A. Yes, he was.

25 Q. Now, Professor Ordover has stated that you told

1 him that you read his report in this case. That's
2 correct, isn't it?

3 A. I'm sorry, say that again.

4 Q. Professor Ordoover said that you had read his
5 report in this case. That's correct, isn't it?

6 A. I don't know if he said that.

7 Q. Is it correct? Did you, in fact, read his
8 report in this case?

9 A. I'm not sure now that you mention it.

10 Q. He said that you had said that it was a good
11 job. Does that refresh your recollection?

12 A. Absolutely not.

13 Q. So, you have no recollection of having read
14 Professor Ordoover's report in this case. Is that
15 correct?

16 A. I actually do not have that recollection, but
17 if I could see it, perhaps that would help.

18 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, this would be a
19 good time for a break, but if you would prefer for us
20 to keep going, that would be fine as well.

21 JUDGE CHAPPELL: How much more cross do you
22 have?

23 MS. CREIGHTON: I would guess 45 minutes to an
24 hour, Your Honor.

25 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay, then let's take a break

1 until 4:30. We're in recess.

2 (A brief recess was taken.)

3 MS. CREIGHTON: May I approach, Your Honor?

4 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes, you may.

5 According to my thermometer, it's only 79
6 degrees in here.

7 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

8 Q. Dr. Willig, I've handed you what's been marked
9 as CX 1716. Does reviewing this document refresh your
10 recollection as to whether you've seen it before?

11 A. I haven't yet reviewed it.

12 Q. I'm sorry?

13 A. (Document review.) I do recall having reviewed
14 something of this character. I can't tell you from my
15 three-minute review just now whether it was the entire
16 document or fragments thereof or an electronic version,
17 but as I'm reading through very quickly some of the
18 articulations of the conclusions here, I recognize the
19 language, I recognize the hand of Professor Ordovery.
20 So, I do feel that I have reviewed some form of this in
21 the past.

22 Q. Okay, let me direct your attention to page 10
23 of his report, paragraph 20, see if you recall having
24 reviewed that.

25 A. (Document review.) I have to tell you that I

1 do not sharply recall the language of paragraph 20.
2 That doesn't mean that I didn't read it or review it in
3 the past. It just means that my memory is limited or
4 perhaps I did not. I just really don't know.

5 Q. You can put that aside, Dr. Willig.

6 Do you recall before the break, Dr. Willig,
7 having said that you did not believe that there should
8 be a presumption that payments with net consideration
9 should be permitted?

10 A. I'm sorry?

11 Q. Let me just ask the question again, probably be
12 quicker.

13 Do you think there should be a presumption that
14 settlements with net consideration are permissible?

15 A. Ah, I'm a little bit worried about the context
16 of the word "presumption." That sounds more legal than
17 I care to put myself into the context of here. My
18 attitude generally is that when it comes to settlements
19 of underlying litigation, patent litigation in
20 particular, which entail net consideration, that the
21 net consideration itself should not be viewed as a red
22 flag, in essence per se violation, even given
23 monopoly -- the first two legs of the Bresnahan
24 three-part test that I assumed in my own analysis.

25 On the other hand, I do think that agreements

1 to settle patent disputes that entail a split where
2 there is net consideration ought to be open to scrutiny
3 by antitrust authorities and that there should not be
4 some sort of a per se blessing or a safe harbor for
5 agreements with net consideration. Rather, they should
6 be subject to scrutiny under the only standard that I'm
7 aware has any reliability here as a matter of policy,
8 and that is looking for the impact on consumer welfare.

9 Q. All right. Let me direct your attention to
10 page 15 of your deposition, lines 18 to 24. You're
11 talking about Professor Bresnahan's analysis.

12 A. I'm sorry, page 15 did you say?

13 Q. Yes, and you state:

14 "I also think it's wrong of him to advance the
15 view, as he has, that the mere fact of passage of net
16 consideration is indicative of an anti-competitive
17 agreement, and instead, I think the proper presumption
18 is the opposite, but in any event, certainly the
19 character of the agreement ought to become a valid
20 object of analysis in a case of this kind."

21 Do you recall giving that answer?

22 A. It sounds fine, and what I mean by "opposite"
23 here, as I read it and as I somewhat recall the episode
24 of our deposition, is that it shouldn't be viewed as
25 indicative of an anti-competitive agreement, and the

1 opposite presumption is appropriate, that is, it's not
2 a free pass either, but it's certainly not a red flag
3 that should cause an agreement that contains it -- even
4 given the first two legs of the Bresnahan test, it
5 should not be viewed as something that's just per se
6 condemned.

7 Q. You also think it shouldn't be presumed to be
8 pro-competitive, right?

9 A. It shouldn't be a free pass for the agreement;
10 rather, it's an element of the agreement, and if it is
11 the view of the antitrust authorities and the fact
12 finder that the agreement in its totality is
13 anti-competitive, is adverse to consumer welfare in the
14 context of monopolization, then I do think that
15 agreement should be open to legal attack.

16 Q. Dr. Willig, you've personally never attempted
17 to apply your economic analysis to a settlement,
18 correct?

19 A. I'm sorry, to?

20 Q. To a settlement involving payment of net
21 consideration, correct?

22 A. Anywhere, what do you mean, in this case?

23 Q. Either in this case or otherwise.

24 A. In this case, I did not look at the facts and
25 try to reach a conclusion about whether or not these

1 agreements are pro or anti-competitive.

2 Q. You also haven't attempted to apply your test
3 in any other circumstance, correct?

4 A. Well, I'm hesitating because I have been and
5 perhaps even am right now involved in some other
6 matters where intellectual property is part of the
7 issue, and I actually -- I haven't particularly thought
8 through whether I could characterize my work in those
9 other matters as standing clear of reaching a
10 conclusion about whether the agreements entailed there
11 are pro-competitive or not. So, I hesitate to
12 characterize my work in other cases as so without
13 thinking it through, but here, I have certainly not
14 come to a conclusion about these particular agreements;
15 rather, I'm confining myself to the methodology
16 underlying what I view as Professor Bresnahan's
17 approach.

18 Q. You're not aware of anyone ever having done a
19 comparison that you propose with respect to any
20 settlement agreement apart from yourself, correct?

21 A. My understanding is that this entire area is
22 pretty fresh. There may be a few FTC cases, which I
23 haven't studied very intensively, but my general
24 education is that there's not a lot of familiarity and
25 experience by the legal and economic communities in

1 analyzing agreements of this kind.

2 Q. So, is the answer that you're not aware of
3 anyone having applied the comparison that you propose
4 to any settlement agreement?

5 A. I'm not sharply aware of any other case where
6 there was a patent-splitting agreement with a side
7 agreement and where somebody performed a test using
8 economics or more broadly trying to gauge impact on
9 consumer welfare through the kind of lens that I'm
10 suggesting here.

11 Q. Well, you're not aware of that analysis being
12 applied under circumstances outside of litigation,
13 correct?

14 A. Outside of litigation? No, I think not.

15 Q. Okay. So, you don't have any idea, do you,
16 sir, whether that standard can actually be applied,
17 right?

18 A. Well, the basic standard that I'm advocating is
19 a relatively standard Section 2 rule of reason approach
20 that says, look, it's -- it's our privilege to have
21 antitrust laws that direct the agencies and the courts
22 to protect consumer interest against undue
23 monopolization, and it's never an easy standard.
24 There's lots of situations where -- there's pros and
25 there's cons and there's facts that point one way and

1 facts that point the other way, and economics can be
2 very helpful, but it really comes down to a mixture of
3 the facts.

4 This is a very familiar circumstance to
5 economists, to me personally, in the sense of using the
6 antitrust laws to protect consumers against practices
7 which have a fundamental ambiguity about them, but one
8 thing is clear is that we steer away as best we can
9 from using per se treatment of certain features of
10 business conduct in the Section 2 context where there's
11 as much potential for harm as there is for gain to the
12 consumer.

13 Q. Okay. It was a simple question, yes or no.
14 Let me ask a different question.

15 A. Is that a question, because I know my answer to
16 that characterization of your question is not quite.

17 Q. Isn't it true --

18 A. We do have experience with Section 2 analyses.

19 Q. Okay. Isn't it true, sir, that you're not
20 aware of anyone in litigation or outside of litigation
21 having attempted to apply the standard that you propose
22 to a settlement with net consideration?

23 A. I think that's probably fair. What I was
24 trying to point out in my last answer is --

25 Q. Actually --

1 A. -- that we do have a lot of experience with
2 Section 2.

3 Q. And Mr. Schildkraut can ask you about that.

4 We talked earlier about the importance of
5 determining the objective odds of litigation. You've
6 personally never attempted to assess the objective odds
7 in any patent case, correct?

8 A. That is correct.

9 Q. You've never conducted research or published
10 articles on the subject, correct?

11 A. Correct.

12 Q. You don't consider yourself an expert in that
13 area, do you?

14 A. No.

15 Q. And you're not aware of any empirical research
16 in that area, correct?

17 A. I can't say that I am, but that doesn't mean it
18 doesn't exist.

19 Q. So, you don't know whether such an assessment
20 is a valid and reliable measure of what the outcome
21 from the trial of a case will actually be, correct?

22 A. I think it is correct to say that I'm not aware
23 of any research on whether or not an expert in subject
24 matter technology can arrive at an opinion about the
25 odds of a patent case prevailing where those opinions

1 have been compared to the actual outcomes of the cases,
2 but I would say in general that there are people,
3 individuals, who portray themselves and who are
4 generally trusted as having something expert of value
5 to say on such subjects.

6 Q. You don't know whether the reliability of an
7 assessment of litigation odds would be affected by how
8 early or late a case settles, correct?

9 A. I don't understand the question.

10 Q. Well, are you aware of any research that
11 addresses the question of whether an assessment of
12 litigation odds early in a case compared to late in the
13 case affects the reliability of such an assessment?

14 A. Oh, I see. I think I understand. So, you're
15 asking me whether if an outside expert were to review
16 the facts --

17 Q. Correct.

18 A. -- as best they're understood earlier rather
19 than later, would that expert have a better shot as
20 being accurate than the later side?

21 Q. Are you aware of any research or analysis as to
22 that?

23 A. I'm not aware of any professional research that
24 goes to that question, but it would make sense as an
25 economist to understand that the more information

1 that's available to the expert making the assessment,
2 that that can only improve the accuracy of the
3 assessment.

4 Q. There's nothing in your analysis that takes
5 that kind of variability into account, correct?

6 A. The variability in the accuracy --

7 Q. Of an assessment of litigation odds.

8 A. And how it might depend upon time?

9 Q. And how that might affect whether it would be
10 decided that a settlement is pro or anti-competitive.

11 A. Well, I do think when I state that my best
12 advice that I can articulate on an approach to
13 resolving issues of the kind of -- judging whether an
14 agreement is pro or anti-competitive, my overall
15 position is no shortcuts, look at the impact on the
16 consumer, look for best evidence, and in particular it
17 makes sense to look at the underlying strength of the
18 patent case.

19 I think when I articulate a standard like that,
20 it's implicit that I understand, by saying "best
21 evidence," that part of the fact finder's task is to
22 assess different kinds of evidence and give them due
23 weight according to the assessment of the reliability
24 of that kind of evidence in the setting of the case.
25 So, I don't think I'm thoroughly avoiding understanding

1 that sometimes it will be relatively unclear and
2 sometimes relatively clear in the fact-finding context
3 about what is the underlying strength of the patent
4 litigation.

5 Q. So, if a comparison of the mean date of entry
6 under settlement and the -- I'm sorry, the settlement
7 date and the mean date of entry under litigation is not
8 determined, you would agree that it's appropriate for
9 the fact finder to consider other evidence that might
10 be dispositive, correct?

11 A. I think an open-ended standard is certainly
12 appropriate at this point.

13 Q. Okay. So, under those circumstances, it would
14 be possible for the fact finder in your opinion to
15 conclude that the agreement was anti-competitive,
16 right?

17 A. I think it's possibly appropriate for the fact
18 finder to find an agreement is anti-competitive by
19 making use of the totality of the evidence, including
20 evidence on the strength of the underlying patent
21 litigation, and giving due weight to the different
22 forms of evidence.

23 Q. One of the facts that you would consider
24 relevant is whether there was an attempt to mask the
25 character of this, correct?

1 A. I think that might be relevant.

2 Q. If there is clear evidence of an attempt to
3 mask the character of a side deal and corresponding
4 evidence that the masking is related to the creation of
5 a longer period of monopoly power in a relevant market,
6 that would be salient for the fact finder to consider,
7 correct?

8 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Ms. Creighton, you don't have
9 to go so slow as to dictate. Just slow down a little,
10 and speak up, please.

11 MS. CREIGHTON: Yes, sir.

12 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

13 Q. Were you able to follow the question?

14 A. I think so.

15 Q. Is that a correct statement of your opinion?

16 A. I think that's right.

17 Q. Okay. Another factor that you would consider
18 relevant is the size of the net consideration relative
19 to the overall market, correct?

20 A. Yes, I think that's a factor.

21 Q. I'd like to look at another one of your charts,
22 with the indulgence of Mr. Schildkraut, the
23 Cash-Strapped Generic chart.

24 Now, this is -- this chart, which I think has
25 been identified as SPX 2332, is one of the models in

1 which you've assumed that the incumbent is risk averse,
2 correct?

3 A. This chart does show risk aversion on the part
4 of the incumbent, yes.

5 Q. Okay. If I can approach the chart, you've
6 shown the incumbent's reservation date, the earliest
7 date they would accept, to the left of the mean
8 probable date of entry under litigation, correct?

9 A. Yes.

10 Q. But to make that assumption, you're not just
11 assuming that the incumbent is risk averse, correct?

12 A. I don't know what you mean.

13 Q. In addition to assuming that the incumbent is
14 risk averse, you're also assuming either that the
15 incumbent is not optimistic or that risk aversion or
16 other litigation costs so swamp its optimism as to push
17 this date earlier than the mean probable entry date,
18 correct?

19 A. You're right in reminding the record, which is
20 fine, that this demonstrative is based on the situation
21 where, in fact, both the litigating entrant and the
22 patent holding incumbent have the same accurate views
23 of the underlying odds of the patent litigation going
24 one way or the other way.

25 Q. Okay. And that's true of some of the other

1 demonstratives that you have here, too, isn't it, that
2 it's not necessarily the case that just because you
3 have a risk averse incumbent, that you're necessarily
4 going to have a reservation date earlier than the mean
5 date of entry under litigation?

6 A. You're right that if one mixes many different
7 factors together, factors that were highlighted in
8 these different models, then all the different forces
9 could come into play simultaneously.

10 Q. Okay.

11 A. So, as you say, for example, if the incumbent
12 here were pessimistic as well as risk averse, that
13 would tend to move the reservation date even more to
14 the left, or if there were a mix of optimism along with
15 risk aversion, that would tend to push the end of the
16 arrow to the right to the extent the optimism governs
17 and to the left to the extent that the risk aversion
18 governs.

19 Q. Okay. So, as it is shown in this exhibit,
20 we're assuming some mix of either relative conservatism
21 in the assessment of odds or relative -- relatively
22 higher degree of risk aversion or litigation costs,
23 correct, to get the date earlier than the mean entry
24 date under litigation?

25 A. Well, to be fair to the specificity of the

1 demonstrative, it is based on an analysis of a -- one
2 of the cases that I've worked through, and in that
3 case, the probabilities that the two parties might
4 prevail in the patent litigation are viewed by the two
5 parties as being the same and are both viewed as being
6 realistic by the outside analyst.

7 Q. Okay.

8 A. So, there is no optimism, no pessimism, just
9 risk aversion and other litigation costs.

10 Q. But optimism is pretty frequent in litigation,
11 correct?

12 A. It might very well be, yes.

13 Q. Okay. Now, all else equal, risk aversion and
14 litigation costs, by pushing the incumbent's
15 reservation date earlier, will tend to make settlements
16 more likely, correct?

17 A. It gives settlements a wider span of possible
18 entry dates that might be mutually acceptable.

19 Q. Because the incumbent's date is getting closer
20 towards the entrant, correct, that's the --

21 A. If we hold the entrant's date fixed, yes.

22 Q. So, in an example like this one, there's two
23 things going on. There's both risk aversion that
24 exceeds the incumbent's optimism, or -- in a case where
25 they're not optimistic, plus something that keeps the

1 entrant from being able to meet the incumbent even
2 under those circumstances, correct?

3 A. When you say "this case," if you're referring
4 to my demonstrative, I just want to repeat myself that
5 this demonstrative is an illustration of a very
6 specific analysis that I've done, and as I've
7 explained, that analysis presumes, because this
8 analysis is focusing on the cash-strapped element, this
9 analysis presumes realism in the understanding of the
10 odds of litigation by both the incumbent and the
11 entrant.

12 Q. Okay. So, if we weren't in a situation where
13 it was a cash-strapped generic, so if this is just the
14 entrant's line, absent that, what would be the effect
15 of risk aversion by the entrant?

16 A. Risk aversion by the entrant would push the --
17 his or her reservation time to the right.

18 Q. So, it moves it closer to the incumbent,
19 correct?

20 A. Yes.

21 Q. Okay. So, all else equal, risk aversion by the
22 parties tends to push them closer together, correct?

23 A. All else equal, yes.

24 Q. Okay. And so in this model you've assumed
25 something that keeps the entrant from having a date

1 that's far enough in time to meet the incumbent even
2 though it's risk averse, correct?

3 A. This demonstrative reflects the condition of
4 there being a cash-strapped generic potential entrant.

5 Q. Okay. And in this example, as in your earlier
6 one, net consideration enables settlements anywhere in
7 the range from the beginning of your orange range
8 identified as viable welfare-enhancing settlements with
9 net consideration all the way over to the right to the
10 end of patent life, correct?

11 A. I'm not sure what your question was. The
12 orange bracket reflects the settlements that are
13 acceptable both to the entrant and the incumbent and
14 are also favorable for consumers. That's what the
15 orange area does.

16 Q. Right, and what net consideration enables is
17 settlements anywhere in this range, correct?

18 A. Conceivably with net consideration of varying
19 amounts, there could be mutually acceptable agreements
20 for the entrant and the incumbent that move to the
21 right. That's not to say that they would actually go
22 there in view of other considerations, like sensitivity
23 to antitrust, but nevertheless within the model those
24 are viable settlement dates as well.

25 Q. Okay. And when I said "this range," I was

1 referring to from the furthest early entry point of
2 viable welfare-enhancing settlements with net
3 consideration over to the end of patent life. Is that
4 what you understood?

5 A. About what?

6 Q. That was what you were answering, is that there
7 could be settlements potentially in this range
8 depending on the size of net consideration, correct?

9 A. There could be settlements that -- wide to the
10 right of the mean probable date of entry under
11 litigation for different amounts of net consideration.

12 Q. All right. Now, the -- in this demonstrative,
13 the incumbent's reservation date, as you've shown it,
14 if the parties are able to use net consideration, the
15 earliest feasible, viable entry date in such a
16 settlement would be strictly later than the incumbent's
17 reservation date, correct? It would be to the right.
18 It would be somewhere in the range you've highlighted
19 in red, correct?

20 A. I don't think it is correct the way you said
21 it.

22 Q. Okay.

23 A. I'll explain again if you like and see if it's
24 responsive.

25 Q. No. Well, isn't it correct that there are --

1 whether or not this viable welfare-enhancing
2 settlements with net consideration, whether that exists
3 in a particular case or dates earlier than the mean
4 probable date of entry under litigation makes some
5 assumptions about the difference between monopoly
6 profits and the sum of duopoly profits?

7 A. It's certainly true that within this model --
8 this is not always the case -- depending upon
9 parameters like the ones you mentioned, whether or not
10 net consideration can actually close the gap, and, in
11 fact, there are examples of a cash-strapped generic
12 potential entrant coupled with a risk averse incumbent
13 where the risk aversion is sufficiently great and the
14 cash-strappedness is not sufficiently severe that they
15 actually close the gap just because of other facts.

16 On the other hand, the gap may be so large that
17 there is still no settlement available with net
18 consideration that does entail a settlement date to the
19 early side of the mean probable date of entry under the
20 litigation. All of these possibilities are alive within
21 the analysis.

22 Q. But in particular, in SPX 2332, to have the
23 viable welfare-enhancing settlements with net
24 consideration, that possibility, the assumptions that
25 you've made are assumptions about risk aversion by the

1 incumbent, cash-strapped generic and differences in the
2 relationship between monopoly and duopoly profits,
3 correct?

4 A. I think those are the salient parameters that
5 undergird these different cases, yes. There may be
6 some others, too.

7 Q. Okay. And are you aware of any settlements or
8 cases in the real world that were unable to settle
9 because there was a gap in the ability of the parties
10 to bridge their differences because they weren't able
11 to pay net consideration?

12 A. No, I don't have empirical evidence on that or
13 whether that has arisen in some actual case due to the
14 fact that the entrant is or was cash-strapped. I just
15 don't have that kind of experience, and I'm not sure
16 the community does as well.

17 Q. All right. Let's look at your demonstrative
18 Varied Assessments of Success, SPX 2333.

19 This demonstrative pictures another situation
20 in which you think that Dr. Bresnahan's rule falls
21 short, correct?

22 A. Oh, yeah.

23 Q. Okay. The reason that the incumbent's
24 reservation date is earlier than the mean probable date
25 of entry under litigation in this case is because

1 they're pessimistic, correct?

2 A. That is correct.

3 Q. So, for example, that would be true if an
4 incumbent thought its odds of winning were 30 percent
5 and, in fact, they were really 50 percent, correct?

6 A. Right, where it is we, the outside analysts,
7 who know the 50 percent number to be right, and where
8 the best estimate of the incumbent in these actual
9 circumstances is, as you say, 30 percent.

10 Q. Okay. Now, in a -- so, the -- since the
11 generic and the incumbent parties don't have the
12 benefit of our omniscience, the generic thinks that the
13 mean entry date under litigation is here at the right
14 arrow, correct?

15 A. Right.

16 Q. So, its reservation date is the furthest point
17 to the right of the range you've labeled "Optimistic
18 Generic Will Only Accept These Settlements," right?

19 A. Will only what?

20 Q. Will only accept these settlements, correct?

21 A. Correct.

22 Q. And the pessimistic incumbent, similarly,
23 thinks that the true mean entry date under litigation
24 is here at the furthest left of the range you've marked
25 the "Pessimistic Incumbent Will Accept These

1 Settlements," correct?

2 A. The true mean, yes, but, of course, both of
3 them may be aware of that they may be optimistic and
4 they may be pessimistic and they may be realistic.
5 They only form their best estimate without necessarily
6 having a great deal of certainty about their estimate,
7 but they may still find their estimate to be their best
8 estimate.

9 Q. It's the best they've got, right?

10 A. The best they've got, but they may understand
11 it could be -- they could be being pessimistic, they
12 could be being optimistic, maybe this is a moment of
13 realism. All they know is their best shot is the ones
14 indicated.

15 Q. Okay. And so any settlement in the range that
16 you would identify as being welfare-enhancing, both
17 parties would think that the agreement they were
18 entering into was, in fact, worse for consumers,
19 wouldn't they?

20 A. Well, they're both aware most directly that
21 they like the settlement. This is a settlement which
22 is there in the orange region because they both find it
23 preferable to litigation given their best sense of what
24 they think the litigation odds are.

25 Q. Well, isn't it --

1 A. I'm sorry, and we, the outside observer, who we
2 pretend to know the truth, we know that it's good for
3 consumers. That's why the orange bracket is to the
4 left of that mean probable date of entry.

5 Q. But the parties, when they enter into this
6 settlement, the generic thinks that the settlement is
7 later than any entry date that consumers would find
8 acceptable, correct?

9 A. Well, that may be the best view, the mean view
10 of the optimistic generic, but the optimistic generic
11 may not -- may be more humble and say, I don't really
12 know that, because if it turns out that I'm actually
13 more pessimistic than usual, then maybe the truth is to
14 the right, maybe the truth is to the left, but I still
15 think I'm getting a good deal from the settlement in
16 view of the mixture of the likelihoods of the different
17 perspectives that I might have.

18 Q. Well, and the incumbent equally thinks that the
19 agreement that it's entering into, in fact, is
20 anti-competitive, correct?

21 A. Well, everything I just said about the generic
22 implies -- applies to the incumbent as well. The
23 incumbent might also be humble about its ability to
24 reach an accurate viewpoint. The incumbent might be
25 aware that sometimes it's optimistic, sometimes it's

1 pessimistic, sometimes it's realistic. Still, what the
2 picture shows as to the reservation time is the one
3 that is the best shot of understanding the truth that
4 the incumbent has, and you're right to say that the
5 orange bracket is to the right of there. Otherwise, it
6 wouldn't be acceptable to the incumbent.

7 Q. Okay. And so the problem with Professor
8 Bresnahan's analysis in your view is that he would
9 condemn settlements that both parties think are
10 anti-competitive but we subsequently decide they're
11 not. Is that correct?

12 A. Well, again, the state of mind of these players
13 may not be so clear as what your question suggests, but
14 if we just amend what you said to say Professor
15 Bresnahan's rule is dangerous in circumstances like
16 this because it cuts off the use of net consideration
17 to obtain settlements which we, the outside observer,
18 know are preferable for consumers, that would be an
19 accurate portrayal of the lesson of this case.

20 Q. Okay. So, you think a better rule is that in a
21 case where both parties think they're entering into a
22 settlement that's worse for consumers than litigation,
23 nonetheless, we should find those settlements under
24 such circumstances would be pro-competitive, correct?

25 A. I don't think that is correct, actually. I was

1 saying here that the particular opinions of the
2 incumbent and the entrant, you know, are both off the
3 mark. They may be aware that they might be off the
4 mark, but they're making the best assessments they can
5 and using those assessments in deciding whether or not
6 to accept any given settlement, but we, the outside
7 observer, or we, the fact finder some years later, but
8 using only the information available to the parties,
9 reach our own assessment that, yeah, some flag has been
10 raised by this net consideration, but we look at the
11 agreement as a whole, we look at the best evidence, and
12 if we're in possession of an assessment that we can
13 rely upon that says, look, the mean probable date of
14 entry really was where the diagram shows it, this turns
15 out to be a good settlement for consumers.

16 Q. Well, Professor Willig, I thought that earlier
17 you had identified concern about antitrust enforcement
18 as being the governor that would keep parties from
19 picking later dates rather than earlier dates. Is that
20 correct?

21 A. Yes, yes.

22 Q. Okay. And that governor in this case would
23 keep the parties from entering into settlement at all,
24 wouldn't it?

25 A. I don't know why that would be the case.

1 Q. Well, both parties think that the agreement
2 they're entering into is anti-competitive.

3 A. Well, I'm not sure if they actually have such
4 views with any certainty if they're properly humble
5 about the possibilities of themselves being optimistic
6 or pessimistic, but one thing I would point out in
7 answer to your question is that if the parties are
8 cautious about using net consideration, if they say,
9 look, we have concluded from our negotiating process
10 that we are at an impasse without net consideration and
11 let's use net consideration but only to the extent
12 that's necessary to make an agreement work, then that
13 would bring them on the diagram to the left-hand side
14 of the orange bracket.

15 Q. Well, the parties don't know where that line
16 is, do they?

17 A. Which line?

18 Q. The mean entry date under litigation.

19 A. No, the parties really do not know where that
20 line is.

21 Q. Okay. And when you were saying that the
22 parties should be humble, it's not only the parties
23 should be humble in saying even though we think we
24 could get in earlier, why don't we delay entry, that's
25 not only -- besides being humble, it's also profitable,

1 isn't it?

2 A. Relative to what?

3 Q. Relative to the dates that they believe are the
4 true dates of entry if litigation continues.

5 A. Well, the orange bracket dates are profitable
6 for both parties relative to litigation, given their
7 own views of the odds of succeeding under litigation.

8 Q. Well, a settlement in the range that you've
9 identified in orange is more profitable to the parties
10 than an entry date at the generic's reservation,
11 correct, with net consideration?

12 A. The way this diagram shows the context, there
13 is no available settlement at the reservation date of
14 the optimistic generic. I believe that's part of the
15 gap. They can't do that. That's the problem.

16 Q. Is there anything in your analytics, Dr.
17 Willig, that would predict the conditions under which
18 parties would choose a settlement with lower payouts
19 instead of settlement with higher payouts?

20 A. No, my analysis doesn't actually represent
21 explicitly within the algebra the force of antitrust
22 sensitivity, but that's what we're talking about now.

23 Q. And isn't it the case, Dr. Willig, that for any
24 point in the orange region that you've highlighted that
25 there exists another settlement to the right of the

1 mean probable date of entry under litigation that is
2 more probable for the parties?

3 A. Yes, I think that's correct.

4 Q. Okay.

5 A. That's correct from the point of view of the
6 diagram, but it's not correct from the broader point of
7 view that factors in concerns about legalities,
8 antitrust sensitivity and what the implications might
9 be of having to go through a process of facing
10 antitrust sanctions.

11 Q. The parties would prefer a settlement to the
12 right of the mean probable date of entry under
13 litigation, a later date, to litigation, correct?

14 A. There exists a net consideration which could be
15 part of an agreement with a later date of entry that
16 would be more profitable for the parties than
17 litigation. Is that what you said? I don't think so.

18 Q. Yes. Well, in the range between after the mean
19 probable date of entry under litigation, there exists
20 settlements in the range after that date that the
21 parties would prefer to litigation, correct, with the
22 payment of net consideration?

23 A. With appropriate payment of net consideration,
24 appropriate to that particular settlement date, yes.

25 Q. Okay. And a settlement in that range provides

1 less competition than would be expected under
2 litigation, correct?

3 A. Yeah. Of course, their preference for such a
4 possible settlement is what's demonstrated on the
5 picture, but that's not a preference that would take
6 into account the broader circumstance in which they
7 face advice by counsel or their own understanding of
8 the antitrust sensitivities about a more unguarded use
9 of net consideration. They might understand that they
10 need to be relatively gentle with the use of net
11 consideration, appropriately so, because of the
12 appearance that that gives to the antitrust authorities
13 and what might be the resulting antitrust scrutiny that
14 they would be subjected to.

15 Q. So, is it your testimony that the parties, even
16 if it would be more profitable for them to pick a date
17 after the mean probable date of entry under litigation,
18 they won't pick that date, even though they don't know
19 where that line is, and they believe all the
20 settlements in the range you've identified are after
21 the date that would, in fact, be the last date that
22 consumers would accept?

23 A. I don't think that's what I said, if you're
24 asking me if that's what I said.

25 Q. Do you agree?

1 A. I don't think so. But it is true that there
2 exist settlements to the later side of the mean
3 probable date with counterpart amounts of net
4 consideration which, apart from antitrust issues and
5 legal issues and sensitivity to them, would be more
6 profitable for the parties at the same time that it
7 would involve a later date than consumers would prefer,
8 but we need to look through policy, as we often do in
9 the world of antitrust, to legal guidance setting
10 appropriate guidance for business conduct so as to push
11 the applicable settlements to the left-hand side of the
12 picture, and the business conduct that is consistent
13 with that force is if you need net consideration as
14 part of the deal, don't use an excessive amount of net
15 consideration relative to the amount that's needed to
16 make the deal work.

17 Q. Let me -- let's look at the next demonstrative
18 that you prepared, the signaling chart.

19 I don't have a lot of questions on this one,
20 Dr. Willig, but just to confirm, this is another one
21 where it's the case that the parties themselves don't
22 know where that mean probable date of entry under
23 litigation line is, correct?

24 A. No, I don't think that's true. Here the
25 analysis is a particular version of a circumstance

1 where there is asymmetric information and where
2 signaling is a possibility. In this particular
3 version, which is to hold true to the analytics, the
4 incumbent actually knows, and moreover, the generic
5 potential entrant has everything accurate except the
6 generic doesn't know whether the applicable life of the
7 patent is long or short.

8 Q. So, is it necessary for your model criticizing
9 Professor Bresnahan in this instance for it to be the
10 case that the parties actually know the true odds?

11 A. No, I'm quite sure the model -- the conclusions
12 of the model are robust to changes in that part of the
13 setup. The setup, again to focus on the particular
14 effect that this analysis explicates, holds the
15 probabilities as accurately as possible but confines
16 attention to the asymmetry of information on the
17 subject of what is the applicable length of the patent
18 life, but I do believe the model is robust to changes
19 in the assumption about the knowledge of the
20 probabilities of success in the underlying patent
21 litigation.

22 Q. Okay. Do you believe that it's a realistic
23 assumption to believe that both parties would know the
24 true odds of litigation?

25 A. I think if one had to conjecture about whether,

1 in general, litigants will at any applicable time of
2 negotiation agree on litigation odds and have it right
3 from the perspective of an outside observer, that's
4 probably less likely than a circumstance where one or
5 the other has it wrong, but that doesn't mean that
6 these models don't cover those cases in a reliable way.
7 I think they do.

8 Q. But in those more general circumstances, then
9 the parties won't know where the outside observer
10 stepping in later draws that mean probable date of
11 entry under litigation, correct?

12 A. I think they can't perfectly predict where an
13 outside analyst would go, but I think they can try to
14 have a sense of that as best they can, understanding
15 that sometimes they're apt to be on the pessimistic
16 side and sometimes they're apt to be on the optimistic
17 side.

18 Q. Okay. And in those circumstances, for every
19 point that -- of settlement in the orange range that
20 you've highlighted, "Viable Welfare-Enhancing
21 Settlements With Net Consideration," there exists
22 another settlement to the right and later than the mean
23 probable date of entry under litigation that with
24 enough net consideration the parties would prefer,
25 correct?

1 A. Let me think about that. I think I can help
2 move this along in that many of the circumstances, if
3 one moves somewhat to the orange bracket and therefore
4 somewhere past the mean probable date of entry, there
5 will also be other settlements with amounts of net
6 consideration that would permit those entry dates to be
7 supported by mutually acceptable agreements.

8 Where I was hedging is that I think if we talk
9 about too much in the way of net consideration, the
10 signaling may be impaired. So, I need to be delicate
11 in answering that part of the question.

12 Q. Let's look at your last chart. This is a chart
13 you've identified as Misplaced Optimism. One of the
14 assumptions that you've made in this model is that the
15 generic is extremely optimistic, correct?

16 A. I don't know about the word "extremely," but
17 the generic is optimistic, and the case that's shown is
18 where that optimism is sufficient relative to the risk
19 aversion of the patent-holding incumbent to create a
20 gap between their reservation dates.

21 Q. Okay. I don't want to actually mark on -- push
22 Mr. Schildkraut's courtesy and mark on his chart, but
23 I'd like to change the hypothetical here a little bit
24 and assume that the risk aversion causes the incumbent
25 actually to go all the way to the point where it meets

1 or overlaps with the entrant.

2 A. Yes.

3 Q. So, in circumstances where the gap between the
4 generic's latest date and the incumbent's earliest date
5 has been closed, so that these lines either meet or
6 overlap, those would be cases in which the parties
7 would be able to settle without the payment of net
8 consideration, correct?

9 A. Yes, that's correct.

10 Q. Okay. And just for simplicity's sake, it might
11 be easier just to imagine this line going all the way
12 over to this point, all right, namely, the incumbent's
13 line going all the way over to meet the generic's entry
14 date, so -- I want to ask you some questions.

15 Assume that the parties otherwise would be able
16 to reach a settlement at the generic's reservation
17 date, okay?

18 A. By "otherwise," do you mean without net
19 consideration?

20 Q. Without net consideration.

21 A. So, the risk aversion is sufficiently
22 pronounced that the arrows meet, period.

23 Q. Correct. Now, under those circumstances, a
24 rule that said that the parties can enter into a
25 settlement as long as it's before the mean probable

1 date of entry under litigation is going to result in
2 settlements closer to the mean probable date of entry
3 under litigation than the parties otherwise could have
4 agreed to. Is that correct?

5 A. What I didn't understand about your question
6 was the part about the rule.

7 Q. Let me break it down.

8 Let's suppose there's a rule that says parties
9 can pay net consideration even in cases where they
10 otherwise would be able to settle, and the only
11 restriction on your ability to pay net consideration is
12 that you can't go past or later than the mean probable
13 date of entry under litigation.

14 Under those circumstances, isn't it the case
15 that the parties' incentives will be to settle for a
16 later date than they otherwise would?

17 A. I think the answer is probably yes, but I'm not
18 sure we have enough caveats to really flesh out the
19 hypothetical. You're saying there is a possible
20 settlement on the early side without net consideration
21 and that we, the antitrust authorities, the fact
22 finder, know that -- I'm just trying to flesh out your
23 hypothetical -- and we, the antitrust agency or the
24 fact finder, see that that other settlement possibility
25 has been ignored or at least circumvented by a

1 different settlement with the passage of net
2 consideration and a later date, and that later date
3 either is or is not past the mean probable date of
4 entry, and you're asking me whether that could happen
5 or whether --

6 Q. No.

7 A. -- what the policy ought to be toward such
8 circumstances?

9 Q. No, I wasn't clear, and it didn't have quite as
10 many restrictions on it as that.

11 It was my understanding from your earlier
12 testimony that you would not limit the rule permitting
13 the payment of net consideration to cases that
14 otherwise wouldn't settle, correct?

15 A. In my direct testimony, I mentioned today that
16 there were two possible benchmarks that I was aware of
17 against which to compare an actual settlement. One
18 would be litigation, and the other would be some other
19 settlement about which there was sufficient knowledge
20 to reach the conclusion that it was practical and that
21 direct evidence shows that the parties could have
22 actually settled in this alternative way at an earlier
23 date with no net consideration.

24 And I mentioned that as an applicable
25 benchmark, as a general matter of policy and theory,

1 and then I saw from a demonstrative and testified that
2 this is what it meant, that Professor Bresnahan asserts
3 in his testimony he's aware of no such thing in this
4 case, and that as a result, the only applicable
5 benchmark is litigation.

6 Q. Well, it's generally going to be the case,
7 isn't it, Dr. Willig, that we're not going to know
8 whether the parties, in fact, could have settled.
9 They're not going to keep around the draft that they
10 signed just in case litigation comes along to say,
11 well, see, we could have, in fact, settled on other
12 terms.

13 A. I'm certainly not going to tell you, and I
14 don't think you mean to imply, that we never see direct
15 evidence of antitrust violation. I think we certainly
16 do. There are well-known instances with clear records
17 and direct evidence that things were done that
18 shouldn't have been done, and the documents or the
19 evidence somehow is sometimes available appropriately
20 to the agencies and to the fact finder.

21 Q. Right. Well, would you apply a screen that
22 said unless the parties proved that they couldn't enter
23 into a settlement otherwise before allowing the payment
24 of net consideration?

25 A. No, I think that's probably too strong for my

1 taste, but I think information in that direction might
2 be pertinent within the assemblage of other information
3 that a fact finder ought to be open to hearing in
4 adjudicating a case of this kind.

5 Q. Well, assuming that for the sake of these
6 questions, assume hypothetically that most cases are
7 able to settle without the payment of net
8 consideration. In all those hypothetical cases, a rule
9 that allows them to pay net consideration is going to
10 result in them choosing a settlement date that's later,
11 correct?

12 A. See, I don't think that is correct. You asked
13 me to assume first of all that there would be an
14 alternative settlement earlier, possibly, without net
15 consideration? I think that's exactly the assumption
16 that my entire body of work that we spent the whole day
17 on shows is an inappropriate assumption for this kind
18 of an analysis.

19 Q. So, you don't think it's ever the case that the
20 parties can settle without the payment of net
21 consideration?

22 A. I didn't say that. I said one can't assume the
23 opposite.

24 Q. But I'm asking you to assume that there would
25 be cases, some cases, in which there would be the

1 payment of no consideration, but they would still
2 settle, all right?

3 A. Oh, I'm sure there are such cases, absolutely.

4 Q. Okay. Now, in those cases, isn't it going to
5 be the case that there exists another settlement with
6 an entry date later in time that the parties would
7 prefer if they are allowed to pay net consideration?

8 A. I think within the four corners of the
9 analysis, it is true that where there is mutually
10 acceptable entry date without net consideration, there
11 is also a later entry date, also mutually acceptable to
12 the two parties, which would become mutually acceptable
13 in the face of sufficient payment of net consideration
14 if one confines attention to the demonstrative and to
15 the algebra without taking into account legal advice
16 and concern about antitrust.

17 Q. Well, I'm not hypothesizing a settlement later
18 than the mean date of entry of litigation, so if that
19 was not clear, let me go back over this.

20 Suppose the parties could settle without the
21 payment of net consideration. Suppose there was a
22 legal rule that said you can pay net consideration as
23 long as you stop at the mean probable date of entry
24 under litigation. Are you with me?

25 A. And that's all your hypothesized rule says?

1 Q. So far. I haven't asked the question, but
2 that's all I've assumed so far.

3 A. So far. I'm with you so far, then.

4 Q. In a case where the parties could settle
5 without the payment of net consideration but the legal
6 rule said but you can pay net consideration as long as
7 you don't go later than the mean date of entry under
8 litigation, isn't it the case that for every settlement
9 date that the parties could agree to without net
10 consideration, they would pick another later date if
11 they were permitted to pay net consideration?

12 A. Within the four corners of the analysis, if
13 there is an entry date that's mutually acceptable
14 without net consideration, there does exist a whole
15 range of later entry dates and supporting net
16 consideration that would be profitable for the parties
17 in the absence of worrying about any legal problems
18 that they might as a result have.

19 Now, if -- if you stipulate in your
20 hypothetical that they're guaranteed a free pass, no
21 legal concern whatsoever, don't worry, use as much net
22 consideration as you want so long as the entry date
23 stays to the inside of the mean probable date of entry
24 under litigation, if that were a credible legal rule,
25 you're per se okay as long as you're to the left, then

1 indeed they would have incentives under such a legal
2 environment to push the date of entry out until the
3 point where they might begin to fear some sort of legal
4 scrutiny or some vulnerability.

5 Q. And that's, in fact, the rule that you've
6 advocated in this case, isn't it?

7 A. No, absolutely not. We've talked just recently
8 and I've talked on and off all day about what is the
9 applicable benchmark for comparison.

10 Q. Assuming that we don't have proof of some
11 extant alternative settlement.

12 A. Well, in this case it's my understanding, based
13 in part on Professor Bresnahan's testimony and I think
14 the complaint as well, but maybe not as clearly as
15 Professor Bresnahan, that complaint counsel is putting
16 forward as the applicable benchmark for comparison that
17 of litigation rather than that of some earlier date of
18 allowed entry under some alternative settlement about
19 which there's sufficient evidence to take it seriously
20 that such a settlement would have been applicable in
21 the absence of net consideration or in the absence of
22 these side arrangements ancillary to the principal
23 settlement of the patent dispute.

24 Q. I wasn't talking about -- and I'm sorry if I
25 wasn't clear -- about the application of your rule to

1 this case, but I understood you to be proposing a rule
2 more generally about how we should approach cases in
3 which there's a settlement with a payment of net
4 consideration, and my understanding is that absent some
5 proof of an alternative settlement agreement, you would
6 advocate a rule that says, regardless of whether the
7 parties could or could not settle, as long as their
8 settlement is earlier than the mean probable date of
9 entry under litigation, it should be permitted. Is
10 that correct?

11 A. No. As a matter of economics -- and I can't
12 opine as a lawyer -- but as a matter of this
13 economist's understanding of Section 2, there's no
14 reason in economics or in economists' conception of the
15 law to confine the applicable benchmark to be that of
16 litigation instead of some other applicable benchmark
17 if there is direct evidence about the reality of that
18 other benchmark. I don't see how you can characterize
19 me as saying anything different.

20 Q. Dr. Willig, just to -- if I can get away with
21 asking a question about all of your models here, isn't
22 it the case that you're not aware of a single case in
23 the real world where the assumptions that are embedded
24 in each of those models could actually apply?

25 A. No, that's not the case. My assumption of risk

1 aversion is based on my view and long experience in the
2 profession that risk aversion is a generally prevalent
3 and important phenomenon for decision-making in the
4 face of risk, and in the context that we're talking
5 about here, namely, settling litigation, it is widely
6 understood that one of the principal purposes and
7 benefits of settlement is to avoid the kind of risk
8 that litigation endemically entails. So, I believe
9 that risk aversion is absolutely endemic to the context
10 that we are together analyzing here.

11 The presumption of misplaced -- excuse me,
12 misplaced optimism, because it's right on the board, my
13 understanding, and I think Professor Bresnahan agrees
14 with this, is that optimism is, in fact, a very common
15 element of the posture of parties in the context of
16 negotiating over the settlement of patent litigation.

17 Q. Dr. Willig, I meant that -- we can just take
18 this chart. Are you aware of any case where an
19 optimistic generic and a risk averse incumbent were
20 unable to settle a patent case because they were not
21 able to pay net consideration?

22 A. No, I'm not aware of any circumstance like
23 that, but I am aware of a wide array of circumstances,
24 including those in this case, where the forces that are
25 being analyzed here are absolutely applicable.

1 MS. CREIGHTON: No further questions.

2 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Redirect?

3 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: No questions.

4 MR. GIDLEY: Yes, Your Honor, behind the board,
5 briefly. Very briefly, Your Honor.

6 REDIRECT EXAMINATION

7 BY MR. GIDLEY:

8 Q. Dr. Willig, within the last hour, you were
9 asked a question the thrust of which went to the
10 following topic:

11 Is there judicial or antitrust enforcement
12 official experience with the weighing of the pro and
13 anti-competitive effects of various agreements,
14 including the kinds of settlement agreements in this
15 case. Do you recall that topic on cross examination?

16 A. Yes, I do.

17 Q. And at one point you were asked a question
18 about whether or not there was sufficient experience in
19 general with applying a rule of reason in which pro and
20 anti-competitive effects were balanced and weighed, and
21 you were cut off, and I would like you to finish the
22 answer that you had in mind.

23 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor. I did
24 not, in fact, ask a general question about rule of
25 reason, and the reason I cut off the witness was I was

1 trying to limit the question specifically to the
2 payment of net consideration in settlements.

3 MR. GIDLEY: Your Honor, I'm just trying to
4 reference the question. I think we were all here, and
5 at one point -- it's the question where Susan said,
6 "Marc can stand up and ask you for the rest of your
7 answer," and I just happen to be the other Mark Your
8 Honor, and I'm just trying to find the question in the
9 last hour and cue it up for the witness.

10 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Ms. Creighton, I understand
11 you're clarifying the record. Do you object to the
12 question otherwise?

13 MS. CREIGHTON: Not if the witness is just
14 being permitted to continue his answer, no.

15 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you.

16 BY MR. GIDLEY:

17 Q. Let's start there, Dr. Willig. You were asked
18 a question by Ms. Creighton, and she cut you off and
19 said to let Marc get the rest of your answer. Could we
20 get the rest of your answer, sir?

21 A. Thank you, and thank you for reminding us that
22 you are also the Mark.

23 The important point that I think is worthwhile
24 making at this juncture is that while there is not, to
25 my knowledge, a great deal of experience in the

1 antitrust agencies and perhaps even in the courts in
2 weighing the pros and cons of the different features,
3 including net consideration, that might arise in an
4 agreement to settle an underlying patent dispute, and
5 while it may seem somewhat daunting in thinking about
6 the challenges that would face antitrust agencies and
7 antitrust fact finders in sorting out the pros and the
8 cons, nevertheless, I understand that there is a great
9 deal of judicial and agency experience in dealing with
10 the weighing of such pros and cons entailing agreements
11 between firms who might be competitors and who might in
12 some sense otherwise find common ground that would be
13 socially beneficial, including beneficial to consumers,
14 not to say that these are not challenging cases and not
15 to say that a great deal of experience is needed to be
16 developed both by the agencies and by the courts to
17 deal with these challenges reliably and well.

18 But nevertheless, our understanding, the
19 economists' understanding of antitrust enforcement, is
20 that Section 2, our antitrust agencies and the courts
21 are basically up to the challenge. The answer is
22 certainly not -- when such a challenge is seen to be
23 somewhat daunting, the answer is not to replace
24 full-blown, appropriate, pro-consumer Section 2
25 analysis with some per se bright line rule which is

1 understood to have very seriously possible negative
2 consequences for the economy generally, including
3 possible negative influences on consumers' interests,
4 and that's I think the situation that we're facing in
5 this area in this case at this time.

6 Q. Sir, do you have an understanding that the
7 antitrust agencies have many years of experience in
8 applying the rule of reason?

9 A. To my knowledge, absolutely the case, yeah.

10 Q. How about the courts, in your years both in the
11 Government and now outside of Government in academia,
12 do you have the same understanding about the federal
13 courts in this country?

14 A. Yes, the courts, too, have a long experience in
15 dealing with the ambiguities that necessarily come up
16 in applying Section 2 to business arrangements.

17 Q. You were asked a variety of questions about
18 your credentials in various areas, such as negotiation
19 and your ability to craft rules for intellectual
20 property. I want to just generally talk about your own
21 background.

22 Sir, do you have any background in assisting
23 the Government agencies with fashioning antitrust
24 policy in terms of guidelines?

25 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor, this

1 would seem to go beyond the scope of cross.

2 MR. GIDLEY: I don't believe so, Your Honor.
3 The implication of the questions and some of the
4 express terms of the questions and the answers were
5 exactly on whether or not Dr. Willig had the kind of
6 experience that would be relevant in this proceeding.

7 JUDGE CHAPPELL: So, what are you trying to do,
8 lay a foundation after the fact?

9 MR. GIDLEY: No, Your Honor, I'm simply trying
10 to rehabilitate the witness or make clear in our paper
11 record what this witness' background is that's
12 applicable to the dispute in question.

13 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'll overrule the objection at
14 this time. Let's see where he's going.

15 THE WITNESS: In the early eighties, I was
16 asked by officials at the Antitrust Division of the
17 Department of Justice to be part of the process of
18 reviewing early drafts of what later became the 1982,
19 the 1984 merger guidelines, and then later on in my own
20 time in office as Deputy Assistant Attorney General in
21 the Antitrust Division of the U.S. Department of
22 Justice, one of my principal responsibilities was, in
23 fact, to draft, to create the updated version of the
24 FTC and DOJ horizontal merger guidelines by making use
25 of the best economics and the experience of the

1 agencies over the course of enforcement of the Sherman
2 and the Clayton Acts.

3 It's not easy to do guidelines, but it's of
4 exceptionally great importance to be open to the
5 complexities that appropriate guidelines require and to
6 steer very, very clear of falling prey to some sort of
7 despair at the complexities and going to an entirely
8 inappropriate per se inflexible rule instead. The
9 agencies have shown that they are up to the task both
10 in terms of merger guidelines, in terms of intellectual
11 property guidelines, which also take on such
12 complexities, and now also the competitor collaboration
13 guidelines of the FTC and the Department of Justice,
14 all of those guidelines dealing with the same kinds of
15 complexities and ambiguities that we see in cases of
16 this kind, and yet in each of those instances, the
17 appropriate reaction of the agencies is to steer clear
18 of inappropriate inflexibility, use their experience,
19 use their analysis, and come up with textured
20 guidelines that make sense for the issues at hand.

21 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, I would move to
22 strike the witness' answer starting from line 36. It's
23 not responsive to the question, which was about his
24 background.

25 MR. GIDLEY: May I respond, Your Honor?

1 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'm disregarding everything
2 after "course of enforcement of the Sherman and the
3 Clayton Acts."

4 MS. CREIGHTON: Thank you, Your Honor.

5 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Next question.

6 BY MR. GIDLEY:

7 Q. Dr. Willig, you were asked a series of
8 questions about Dr. Ordover. Did Dr. Ordover agree
9 with the Bresnahan test?

10 MS. CREIGHTON: Objection, Your Honor, I think
11 the witness stated that he couldn't recall, so I asked
12 him no questions about the document, about Professor
13 Ordover's opinions.

14 MR. GIDLEY: I'm ready on that, Your Honor.
15 The quotes from the realtime transcript at page 238 and
16 239 are as follows.

17 "I do recall reviewing something of this
18 character," when he was shown the report, and "I
19 recognize the hand of professor Ordover." My question
20 asked does he remember Ordover's overall conclusion.

21 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Overruled.

22 MS. CREIGHTON: Your Honor, I guess I would
23 further object in that it's beyond the scope.

24 MR. GIDLEY: She showed him --

25 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I think he just indicated it's

1 within the scope. Overruled.

2 THE WITNESS: My recollection of the parts of
3 my review of Ordoover's work is that my reaction was
4 finding that he did, indeed, agree with me in my
5 reaction that Professor Bresnahan's test was dangerous
6 and inappropriate, and I think in terms of general
7 conclusions, he did come out in the same place that I
8 did.

9 MR. GIDLEY: All right, we're close to the end,
10 so just bear with me --

11 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I know, you did say very
12 briefly, I think, when you --

13 MR. GIDLEY: I have two more "very brieflies,"
14 Your Honor.

15 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay.

16 BY MR. GIDLEY:

17 Q. All right, I have put on the screen without the
18 assistance of my right hand, Raj Malik, a quote from
19 the Shapiro document that Ms. Creighton published to
20 you earlier today. Do you recall seeing the document
21 earlier today in the exam?

22 A. I do.

23 Q. I want to direct your attention to the first
24 highlighted paragraph. Are you able to make it out
25 there?

1 A. It's not easy.

2 Q. I'll try to hold it flat.

3 A. Oh, that's better.

4 Q. And I will read it out loud. Again, this is
5 from this March 20, 2001 Carl Shapiro document, CX 708,
6 at page 10:

7 "Since disputes tend to arise when there are
8 conflicting views of success at trial, it may be
9 necessary to find 'win-win' approaches, i.e., mutually
10 beneficial trades, to break the deadlock. In fact,
11 some of the most effective and creative negotiators
12 work their art not by haggling simply over price, but
13 by looking along multiple dimensions for ways in which
14 the parties to the dispute can trade with each other
15 for mutual benefit. I hope the Commission would agree
16 that prohibiting litigants from trading non-financial
17 assets and making side deals as part of a patent
18 settlement would greatly impair the settlement process.
19 For example, virtually all cross-licenses could be
20 swept up in such a rule."

21 Do you see that passage, sir?

22 A. Yes, I do.

23 Q. And sir, do you agree with the views of Dr.
24 Shapiro in connection with the views he expressed in
25 those sentences?

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 A. I do agree with almost all of the material you
2 read. The last sentence, however, "For example,
3 virtually all cross-licenses could be swept up in such
4 a rule," goes beyond the material that I feel secure in
5 endorsing here.

6 Q. Well, let me just make sure that I'm clear.
7 Could you agree, sir, that in general, you would hope
8 that the FTC would agree that prohibiting litigants
9 from trading nonfinancial assets and making side deals
10 as part of a patent settlement would greatly impair the
11 settlement process?

12 A. Yes, I do agree with that.

13 Q. All right. Finally, sir, just down on the same
14 page, Dr. Shapiro wrote in March of last year, a year
15 ago:

16 "This approach would, in my opinion, be far
17 superior to the approach that staff seems to be
18 advocating to flatly prohibit parties involved in
19 patent litigation from finding creative ways to resolve
20 their disputes by engaging in mutually beneficial
21 trades to smooth the settlement process. Such an
22 inflexible and blunderbuss policy would greatly impede
23 the settlement of patent disputes, and would block many
24 pro-competitive settlements."

25 Do you see that language?

1 A. I do.

2 Q. Do you agree with those two sentences?

3 A. I certainly agree with the portion that rejects
4 the approach of the staff as characterized by Shapiro
5 to be advocating flatly prohibiting parties involved in
6 patent litigation from finding creative ways to resolve
7 their disputes by engaging in mutually beneficial
8 trades to smooth the settlement process. I also agree
9 with the last sentence, "Such an inflexible and
10 blunderbuss policy --" yeah, I'll embrace those
11 adjectives " -- would greatly impede the settlement of
12 patent disputes, and would block many pro-competitive
13 settlements."

14 Q. All right, it's late, and here's the last
15 question. I want to show you an excerpt, Dr. Willig --
16 sorry for the orange, I didn't know you were color
17 blind, I apologize -- but do you see, sir, the sentence
18 that we've yellow highlighted -- just a second -- this
19 is from the FTC's trial brief which was written in
20 January of this year.

21 "This case does not challenge the settlement of
22 patent disputes by an agreement on a date of entry,
23 standing alone, or the payment of fair market value in
24 connection with 'side deals' to such an agreement."

25 Do you see that language?

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025

1 A. Yes, I do.

2 Q. The second part of the sentence, that the FTC
3 in this case does not challenge the payment of fair
4 market value in connection with side deals to such an
5 agreement, do you agree with that view?

6 A. I agree that that is a wise decision if that
7 is, indeed, the decision of complaint counsel.

8 MR. GIDLEY: No further questions, Your Honor.

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Recross?

10 MS. CREIGHTON: Just on one subject, Your
11 Honor.

12 RECROSS EXAMINATION

13 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

14 Q. In stating that you agreed with Professor
15 Ordovery's general opinion, it was his opinion, wasn't
16 it, that a settlement that falls within the range
17 between the generic's estimate of its entry date and
18 the incumbent's estimate of its entry date, within that
19 range settlements should be prima facie reasonable,
20 correct?

21 A. I think that takes us back to what you asked me
22 about before, was that paragraph 20 or so?

23 Q. Well, is that the opinion that you were
24 referring to?

25 A. No, no, that's the part actually that I don't

1 recall freshly enough to testify about today. What I
2 was remarking about in my answer to the questions of
3 Mr. Gidley had to do with the overarching conclusions
4 in the first few pages of that document that you showed
5 me. It was those paragraphs in the early few pages
6 that I just reviewed as you were showing me the
7 document and that reminded me that I had, indeed, seen
8 paragraphs much like those or exactly those at some
9 time in the past, and it was those paragraphs that I
10 recall as being properly characterized in my own mind
11 as Professor Ordover basically agreeing with me in
12 first of all rejecting Professor Bresnahan's so-called
13 rule and also agreeing with me that that rule would be
14 dangerous because there do exist substantial
15 circumstances where using net consideration as a tool
16 for helping to settle patent disputes is a good thing
17 for consumers and a good thing for the economy.

18 Q. In paragraph 20, Professor Ordover says, "It is
19 my view that an entry date reached through a settlement
20 that falls within such a range," he's talking about
21 between the parties' two estimated entry dates, "should
22 be considered as being prima facie reasonable. An
23 entry date reached through a settlement that lies
24 outside of this range might be seen as 'lengthening'
25 the expected 'legitimate' life of the patent."

1 Do you agree with that?

2 MR. SCHILDKRAUT: Objection, Your Honor, asked
3 and answered.

4 JUDGE CHAPPELL: We'll hear it again.
5 Overruled.

6 THE WITNESS: I'm just not clear enough on what
7 he's saying with those words outside of the context
8 that I don't recall as I sit here to be able to say
9 whether I agree with him when he says those words or
10 not.

11 BY MS. CREIGHTON:

12 Q. If he were saying that a settlement that lies
13 later than either party's subjective estimate of their
14 entry date under litigation should be presumed to be
15 anti-competitive, you would agree or disagree with
16 that?

17 A. I can't accept the context for what conclusion
18 he's drawing based on what assumptions. I mean, I've
19 got analyses that we've been through today where
20 because of the third-party entry date or because of
21 signaling, there's other applicable regions where the
22 settlements are clearly pro-consumer, and I'm not sure
23 if he's deliberately assuming those kinds of
24 circumstances away or -- I just don't recall the
25 setting for the reading of paragraph 20 clearly enough

1 to tell you as I sit here whether I agree with him in
2 that respect or not.

3 Q. Okay. So, a rule that said you can't have an
4 entry date later than either party expects under
5 litigation, that would be a rule you would reject,
6 correct?

7 A. That would be a rule that I would what?

8 Q. Reject.

9 A. I didn't say that. I said I can't come to
10 grips with that without understanding the surrounding
11 context, and therefore, I can't answer your question as
12 I sit here, because I don't know the surrounding
13 context.

14 MS. CREIGHTON: No further questions.

15 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Anything else?

16 MR. GIDLEY: No further questions, Your Honor.

17 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Thank you, Dr. Willig, you're
18 excused.

19 THE WITNESS: Thank you.

20 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Mr. Curran?

21 MR. CURRAN: Your Honor, may I be so bold as to
22 raise a housekeeping matter? We discussed the possible
23 acceleration of briefing with regard to our motion on
24 rebuttal witnesses.

25 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay.

1 MR. CURRAN: And Your Honor, I believe,
2 suggested the possibility of an argument on that matter
3 perhaps on Tuesday?

4 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Tuesday afternoon, yes.

5 MR. CURRAN: I wanted to raise that, Your
6 Honor, because we have been given notice that complaint
7 counsel's first proffered rebuttal witness who was
8 noticed for Wednesday of next week is among the
9 rebuttal witnesses that we are challenging. So, moving
10 quicker rather than slower on that motion may be
11 appropriate.

12 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Ms. Bokat, you're up.

13 MS. BOKAT: Thank you, Your Honor.

14 JUDGE CHAPPELL: When can you have a written
15 response to this motion?

16 MS. BOKAT: Well, it's an important motion.
17 We're certainly not proposing to ask the Court for a
18 whole ten days, but the motion seems to seek to strike
19 six or maybe seven of our rebuttal witnesses. So, we
20 do need time to adequately answer that.

21 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Well, since we don't have any
22 witnesses Monday and Tuesday, I'm going to need
23 something Monday -- I'm going to need something Tuesday
24 morning by 10:30, because we're in the middle of trial,
25 this involves ongoing witnesses, and these are not

1 normal circumstances.

2 MS. BOKAT: 10:30 Tuesday morning?

3 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

4 MS. BOKAT: The Court will have it.

5 JUDGE CHAPPELL: And I am going to hear oral
6 argument on this motion at 2:00 p.m. Tuesday right
7 here. Any problem with that?

8 MS. BOKAT: Not from complaint counsel.

9 MR. CURRAN: Not at all, Your Honor. Thank you
10 very much.

11 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I'll also hear oral argument
12 on the -- what's the final title -- the motion to
13 dismiss?

14 MR. CURRAN: That is what we titled it.

15 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Directed verdict, what is it?

16 MR. CURRAN: It's called a motion to dismiss.
17 I think colloquially it might be called motion for
18 directed verdict.

19 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay, I will also hear that on
20 Tuesday.

21 MS. BOKAT: Your Honor, on that motion, I think
22 we've already had oral argument on it at the conclusion
23 of complaint --

24 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Well, I think we had partial
25 argument on that. I'd have to go back and check. I

1 don't remember over 6000 pages, but I know that they
2 attempted to argue it. I know I heard partial argument
3 on it. Now that I have the briefs, I'll allow
4 argument -- further argument on it, not lengthy
5 argument, summarized argument.

6 MR. CURRAN: Very good, Your Honor.

7 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Anything further?

8 Mr. Nields, you're rising as if you are going
9 to speak.

10 MR. NIELDS: I was rising, hopefully I will
11 speak if the Court will -- is willing to hear me.

12 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay.

13 MR. NIELDS: Just very briefly, Your Honor, I
14 think Mr. Curran indicated, and perhaps I did earlier,
15 that this concludes the -- our last witness I think for
16 both of us. We do have document issues that we're
17 still in discussion with complaint counsel about.
18 We're hopeful we can reach agreement. If we can't, we
19 will need to bring them to the Court's attention for
20 the Court's decision. We're perfectly prepared to do
21 that either before or after the 2:00 on Tuesday
22 argument. We would be prepared to address it earlier
23 than that, too, at the Court's pleasure.

24 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I want to allow complaint
25 counsel to focus on their written response to the

1 pending motion, so that that's -- that's something that
2 I will -- I will consider that at the hearing Tuesday
3 afternoon.

4 MR. NIELDS: Excellent. Thank you, Your Honor.

5 MR. CURRAN: Thank you, Your Honor.

6 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay, we're adjourned --

7 MS. BOKAT: Your Honor, with trepidation, could
8 I raise one thing very briefly?

9 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Yes.

10 MS. BOKAT: I just wanted to alert the Court
11 that complaint counsel filed a motion today, and I give
12 courtesy copies to respondents' counsel, to add one
13 rebuttal witness. I'm not asking for a ruling from
14 Your Honor, and I'm not asking for a response from
15 respondents' counsel, but I just wanted to be
16 aboveboard and let the Court know what we are doing.

17 MR. CURRAN: Your Honor, we're comfortable
18 addressing this at 2:00 on Tuesday, and we can have a
19 brief responding to this by 10:30 Tuesday morning.

20 JUDGE CHAPPELL: Okay, and let me give you a
21 little bit of my philosophy on responding to these
22 motions, Ms. Bokat, because you're the one who doesn't
23 have your ten days to respond. Under normal
24 circumstances, a written motion, you would have ten
25 days to respond. During trial, I consider a written

1 motion to be a courtesy so that I don't have to hear
2 something on the fly in the middle of trial and deal
3 with it that day. So, things are just not normal when
4 we're in the middle of a hearing or a trial. That's
5 why I need to expedite your response, and hopefully I
6 can get a ruling to you late Tuesday so that either all
7 the witnesses come or they don't come, and I can save
8 some unavoidable travel if that's the way it goes.

9 Anything further?

10 MR. CURRAN: Thank you for indulging us on a
11 Friday afternoon, Your Honor.

12 JUDGE CHAPPELL: I guess that leave early on
13 Friday rule is just gone.

14 Okay, we are adjourned until 2:00 p.m. Tuesday.
15 Thank you, have a good weekend.

16 MR. GIDLEY: Thank you.

17 MR. NIELDS: Thank you, Your Honor.

18 (Whereupon, at 6:00 p.m., the hearing was
19 adjourned.)

20

21

22

23

24

25

1 C E R T I F I C A T I O N O F R E P O R T E R

2 DOCKET/FILE NUMBER: 9297

3 CASE TITLE: SCHERING-PLOUGH/UPSHER-SMITH

4 DATE: MARCH 8, 2002

5

6 I HEREBY CERTIFY that the transcript contained
7 herein is a full and accurate transcript of the notes
8 taken by me at the hearing on the above cause before
9 the FEDERAL TRADE COMMISSION to the best of my
10 knowledge and belief.

11

12 DATED: 3/11/02

13

14

15

16 SUSANNE BERGLING, RMR

17

18 C E R T I F I C A T I O N O F P R O O F R E A D E R

19

20 I HEREBY CERTIFY that I proofread the
21 transcript for accuracy in spelling, hyphenation,
22 punctuation and format.

23

24

25 DIANE QUADE

For The Record, Inc.
Waldorf, Maryland
(301) 870-8025